



**DELHI UNIVERSITY  
LIBRARY**

DELHI UNIVERSITY LIBRARY

Cl. No. 0:1K08x

G1.3,2

Ac. No. 167889

**Date of release for loan**

21 MAY 1962

This book should be returned on or before the date last stamped below. An overdue charge of 0.6 nP. will be charged for each day the book is kept overtime.



THE WORKS OF JOHN MILTON





# THE WORKS OF JOHN MILTON



VOLUME III

PART II

NEW YORK  
Columbia University Press

1931

**COPYRIGHT**  
**Columbia University Press**  
**1931**

**PRINTED IN THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA**  
**BY THE PRINTING HOUSE OF WILLIAM EDWIN RUDGE, INC.**  
**MOUNT VERNON, NEW YORK**

THE DOCTRINE AND DISCIPLINE  
OF DIVORCE

THE  
DOCTRINE  
AND DISCIPLINE  
OF  
DIVORCE:  
RESTORED TO THE GOOD  
OF BOTH SEXES,

From the bondage of Canon Law,  
and other mistakes, to Christian freedom,  
guided by the Rule of Charity.

Wherein also many places of Scripture, have  
recover'd their long - lost meaning.

Seasonable to be now thought on in the  
Reformation intended.

---

MATTH. 13. 52.

*Every Scribe instructed to the Kingdom of Heav'n, is like the Master  
of a house which bringeth out of his treasure things old and new.*

---

L O N D O N,

Printed by T. P. and M. S. In Goldsmiths  
Alley. 1 6 4 3.

To The  
Parlament of England,  
with the Assembly.

---

**I**F it were seriously askt, and it would be no untimely question, Renowned Parlament, select Assembly, who of all Teachers and Maisters that have ever taught, hath drawn the most Disciples after him, both in Religion, and  
5 in manners, it might bee not untruly answer'd, Custome. Though vertue be commended for the most perswasive in her *Theory*; and Conscience in the plain demonstration of the spirit, finds most evincing, yet whether it be the secret of divine will, or the originall blindnesse we are born in, so it  
10 happ'ns for the most part, that Custome still is silently receiv'd for the best instructor. Except it be, because her method is so glib and easie, in some manner like to that vision of *Ezekiel*, rowling up her sudden book of implicit knowledge, for him that will, to take and swallow down at pleasure;  
15 which proving but of bad nourishment in the concoction, as it was heedlesse in the devouring, puffs up unhealthily, a certaine big face of pretended learning, mistaken among credulous men, for the wholesome habit of soundnesse and good constitution; but is indeed no other, then that swoln  
20 visage of counterfeit knowledge and literature, which not

onely in private marrs our education, but also in publick is the common climer into every chaire, where either Religion is preach't, or Law reported: filling each estate of life and profession, with abject and servil principles; depressing the  
5 high and Heaven-born spirit of Man, farre beneath the condition wherein either God created him, or sin hath sunke him. To persue the Allegory, Custome being but a meer face, as Eccho is a meere voice, rests not in her unaccomplishment, untill by secret inclination, shee accorporat her selfe with  
10 error, who being a blind and Serpentine body without a head, willingly accepts what he wants, and supplies what her incompleatnesse went seeking. Hence it is, that Error supports Custome, Custome count'nances Error. And these two betweene them would persecute and chase away all truth and  
15 solid wisdom out of humane life, were it not that God, rather then man, once in many ages, cals together the prudent and Religious counsels of Men, deputed to repress the encroachments, and to worke off the inveterate blots and obscurities wrought upon our mindes by the suttile insinuating  
20 of Error and Custome: Who with the numerous and vulgar train of their followers, make it their chiefe designe to envie and cry-down the industry of free reasoning, under the terms of humor, and innovation; as if the womb of teeming Truth were to be clos'd up, if shee presume to bring forth ought,  
25 that sorts not with their unchew'd notions and suppositions. Against which notorious injury and abuse of mans free soule to testifie and oppose the utmost that study and true labour can attaine, heretofore the incitement of men reputed grave

hath led me among others; and now the duty and the right of an instructed Christian calls me through the chance of good or evil report, to be the sole advocate of a discount'nanc't truth: a high enterprise Lords and Commons, a high enterprise and a hard, and such as every seventh Son of a seventh Son does not venture on. Nor have I amidst the clamor of so much envie and impertinence, whether to appeal, but to the concourse of so much piety and wisdom heer assembl'd. Bringing in my hands an ancient and most necessary, most  
10 charitable, and yet most injur'd Statute of *Moses*: not repeal'd ever by him who only had the authority, but thrown aside with much inconsiderat neglect, under the rubbish of Canonically ignorance: as once the whole law was by some such like conveyance in *Josiahs* time. And hee who shall indeav-  
15 our the amendment of any old neglected grievance in Church or State, or in the daily course of life, if he be gifted with abilities of mind that may raise him to so high an undertaking, I grant he hath already much whereof not to repent him; yet let me arreede him, not to be the foreman of any mis-judg'd  
20 opinion, unlesse his resolutions be firmly seated in a square and constant mind, not conscious to it self of any deserved blame, and regardles of ungrounded suspicions. For this let him be sure he shall be boarded presently by the ruder sort, but not by discreet and well nurtur'd men, with a thousand  
25 idle descants and surmises. Who when they cannot confute the least joynt or sinew of any passage in the book; yet God forbid that truth should be truth, because they have a boistrous conceit of some pretences in the Writer. But were they



not more busie and inquisitive then the Apostle commends, they would heare him at least, *rejoycing, so the Truth be preacht; whether of envie or other pretence whatsoever*: For Truth is as impossible to be soil'd by any outward touch, as the Sun beam. Though this ill hap wait on her nativity, that shee never comes into the world, but like a Bastard, to the ignominy of him that brought her forth: till Time the Mid-wife rather then the mother of Truth, have washt and salted the Infant, declar'd her legitimat, and Churcht the father of his young *Minerva*, from the needlesse causes of his purgation. Your selves can best witnesse this, worthy Patriots, and better will, no doubt, hereafter: for who among ye of the formost that have travail'd in her behalfe to the good of Church, or State, hath not been often traduc't to be the agent of his owne by-ends, under pretext of Reformation. So much the more I shall not be unjust to hope, that however Infamy, or Envy may work in other men to doe her fretfull will against this discourse, yet that the experience of your owne uprightness mis-interpreted, will put ye in mind to give it free audience and generous construction. What though the brood of Belial, the draffe of men, to whom no liberty is pleasing, but unbridl'd and vagabond lust without pale or partition, will laugh broad perhaps, to see so great a strength of Scripture mustering up in favour, as they suppose, of their debaucheries; they will know better, when they shall hence learne, that honest liberty is the greatest foe to dishonest licence. And what though others out of a waterish and queasy conscience because ever crasy and never yet sound,

will rail and fancy to themselves, that injury and licence is the best of this Book? Did not the distemper of their own stomachs affect them with a dizzy megrim, they would soon tie up their tongues, and discern themselves like that *Assyrian* blasphemer all this while reproaching not man but the Almighty, *the holy one of Israel*, whom they doe not deny to have belawgiv'n his owne sacred people with this very allowance, which they now call injury and licence, and dare cry shame on, and will doe yet a while, till they get a little cordiall sobriety to settle their qualming zeale. But this question concerns not us perhaps: Indeed mans disposition though prone to search after vain curiosities, yet when points of difficulty are to be discusst, appertaining to the removall of unreasonable wrong and burden from the perplext life of our brother, it is incredible how cold, how dull, and farre from all fellow feeling we are, without the spurre of self-concernment. Yet if the wisdome, the justice, the purity of God be to be cleer'd from foulest imputations which are not yet avoided, if charity be not to be degraded and trodd'n down under a civil Ordinance, if Matrimony be not to be advanc't like that exalted perdition, writt'n of to the *Thessalonians*, *above all that is called God*, or goodnesse, nay, against them both, then I dare affirm there will be found in the Contents of this Booke, that which may concern us all. You it concerns chiefly, Worthies in Parlament, on whom, as on our deliverers, all our grievances and cares, by the merit of your eminence and fortitude are devolv'd: Me it concerns next, having with much labour and faithfull diligence first found out, or

at least with a fearlesse and communicative candor first published to the manifest good of Christendome, that which calling to witnesse every thing mortall and immortall, I beleieve unfainedly to be true. Let not other men thinke their conscience bound to search continually after truth, to pray for enlightning from above, to publish what they think they have so obtaind, & debarr me from conceiving my self ty'd by the same duties. Yee have now, doubtlesse by the favour and appointment of God, yee have now in your hands a great and  
10 populous Nation to Reform; from what corruption, what blindnes in Religion yee know well; in what a degenerat and fal'n spirit from the apprehension of native liberty, and true manlines, I am sure ye find: with what unbounded licence rushing to whordoms and adulteries needs not long enquiry:  
15 insomuch that the fears which men have of too strict a discipline, perhaps exceed the hopes that can bee in others, of ever introducing it with any great successe. What if I should tell yee now of dispensations and indulgences, to give a little the rains, to let them play and nibble with the bait a while; a  
20 people as hard of heart as that Egyptian Colony that went to *Canaan*. This is the common doctrine that adulterous and injurious divorces were not conniv'd only, but with eye open allow'd of old for hardnesse of heart. But that opinion, I trust, by then this following argument hath been well read,  
25 will be left for one of the mysteries of an indulgent Antichrist, to farm out incest by, and those his other tributary pollutions. What middle way can be tak'n then, may some interrupt, if we must neither turne to the right nor to the left,

and that the people hate to be reform'd: Mark then, Judges and Lawgivers, and yee whose Office is to be our teachers, for I will utter now a doctrine, if ever any other, though neglected or not understood, yet of great and powerfull importance to the governing of mankind. He who wisely would  
5 restrain the reasonable Soul of man within due bounds, must first himself know perfectly, how far the territory and dominion extends of just and honest liberty. As little must he offer to bind that which God hath loos'n'd, as to loos'n that  
10 which he hath bound. The ignorance and mistake of this high point, hath heapt up one huge half of all the misery that hath bin since *Adam*. In the Gospel we shall read a supercilious crew of masters, whose holinesse, or rather whose evill eye, grieving that God should be so facil to man, was to set  
15 straiter limits to obedience, then God had set; to inslave the dignity of man, to put a garrison upon his neck of empty and overdignifi'd precepts: And we shall read our Saviour never more greev'd and troubl'd, then to meet with such a peevish madnesse among men against their own freedome.  
20 How can we expect him to be lesse offended with us, when much of the same folly shall be found yet remaining where it lest ought, to the perishing of thousands. The greatest burden in the world is superstition; not onely of Ceremonies in the Church, but of imaginary and scarcrow sins at home.  
25 What greater weakning, what more suttle stratagem against our Christian warfare, when besides the grosse body of real transgressions to encounter; wee shall bee terrify'd by a vain and shadowy menacing of faults that are not: When things

indifferent shall be set to over-front us, under the banners of sin, what wonder if wee bee routed, and by this art of our Adversary, fall into the subjection of worst and deadliest offences. The superstition of the Papist is, *touch not, taste not,*  
5 when *God* bids both: and ours is, *part not, separat not*, when God and charity both permits and commands. *Let all your things be done with charity*, saith *St. Paul*: and his Master saith, *Shee is the fulfilling of the Law*. Yet now a civil, an indifferent, a sometime diswaded Law of mariage, must be  
10 forc't upon us to fulfill, not onely without charity, but against her. No place in Heav'n or Earth, except Hell, where charity may not enter: yet mariage the Ordinance of our solace and contentment, the remedy of our lonelinesse will not admit now either of charity or mercy to come in and mediate or  
15 pacifie the fiercnes of this gentle Ordinance, the unremedied lonelinesse of this remedy. Advise yee well, supreme Senat, if charity be thus excluded and expulst, how yee will defend the untainted honour of your own actions and proceedings: He who marries, intends as little to conspire his own ruine,  
20 as he that swears Allegiance: and as a whole people is in proportion to an ill Government, so is one man to an ill mariage. If they against any authority, Covnant, or Statute, may by the sovereign edict of charity, save not only their lives, but honest liberties from unworthy bondage, as well may he against any  
25 private Covnant, which hee never enter'd to his mischief, redeem himself from unsupportable disturbances to honest peace, and just contentment: And much the rather, for that to resist the highest Magistrat though tyrannizing, God never

gave us expresse allowance, only he gave us reason, charity, nature and good example to bear us out; but in this economical misfortune, thus to demean our selves, besides the warrant of those foure great directors, which doth as justly belong hither, we have an expresse law of *God*, and such a law, as wherof our Saviour with a solemn threat forbid the abrogating. For no effect of tyranny can sit more heavy on the Common-wealth, then this household unhappines on the family. And farewell all hope of true Reformation in the  
10 state, while such an evill as this lies undiscern'd or unregarded in the house. On the redresse wherof depends, not only the spiritfull and orderly life of our grown men, but the willing, and carefull education of our children. Let this therefore be new examin'd, this tenure and free-hold of mankind,  
15 this native and domestick Charter giv'n us by a greater Lord then that *Saxon* King the Confessor. Let the statutes of God be turn'd over, be scann'd a new, and consider'd; not altogether by the narrow intellectuals of quotationists and common placers, but (as was the ancient right of Counsels) by  
20 men of what liberall profession soever, of eminent spirit and breeding joyn'd with a diffuse and various knowledge of divine and human things; able to ballance and define good and evill, right and wrong, throughout every state of life; able to shew us the waies of the Lord, strait and faithfull as they are,  
25 not full of cranks and contradictions, and pit falling dispenses, but with divine insight and benignity measur'd out to the proportion of each mind and spirit, each temper and disposition, created so different each from other, and yet by

the skill of wise conducting, all to become uniform in vertue. To expedite these knots were worthy a learned and memorable Synod; while our enemies expect to see the expectation of the Church tir'd out with dependencies and independencies how they will compound, and in what Calends. Doubt not, worthy Senators to vindicate the sacred honour and judgment of *Moses* your predecessor, from the shallow commenting of Scholasticks and Canonists. Doubt not after him to reach out your stedly hands to the mis-inform'd and  
10 wearied life of man; to restore this his lost heritage into the household state; wherewith be sure that peace and love the best subsistence of a Christian family will return home from whence they are now banisht; places of prostitution will be lesse haunted, the neighbours bed lesse attempted, the yoke  
15 of prudent and manly discipline will be generally submitted to, sober and well order'd living will soon spring up in the Common-wealth. Ye have an author great beyond exception, *Moses*; and one yet greater, he who hedg'd in from abolishing every smallest jot and tittle of precious equity contain'd in that Law, with a more accurat and lasting Masoreth,  
20 then either the Synagogue of *Ezra*, or the *Galilean* School at *Tiberias* hath left us. Whatever els ye can enact, will scarce concern a third part of the Brittish name: but the benefit and good of this your magnanimous example, will easily spread  
25 far beyond the banks of *Tweed* and the *Norman* Iles. It would not be the first, or second time, since our ancient *Druides*, by whom this Island was the Cathedrall of Philosophy to *France*, left off their pagan rites, that England hath

had this honour vouchsaft from Heav'n, to give out reformation to the World. Who was it but our English *Constantine* that baptiz'd the Roman Empire? who but the *Northumbrian Willibrode*, and *Winifride* of *Devon* with their followers, were the first Apostles of *Germany*? who but *Alcuin* and *Wicklef* our Country men open'd the eyes of *Europe*, the one in arts, the other in Religion. Let not England, forget her precedence of teaching nations how to live.

Know, Worthies, know and exercise the privilege of your honour'd Country. A greater title I heer bring ye, then is either in the power or in the policy of *Rome* to give her *Monarchs*; this glorious act will stile ye the defenders of Charity. Nor is this yet the highest inscription that will adorne so religious and so holy a defence as this; behold heer the pure and sacred Law of God, and his yet purer and more sacred name offering themselves to you first, of all Christian reformers to be acquitted from the long suffer'd ungodly attribute of patronizing Adultery. Deferre not to wipe off instantly these imputative blurrs and stains cast by rude fancies upon the throne and beauty it selfe of inviolable holines: lest some other people more devout and wise then wee, be-reav us this offer'd immortal glory, our wonted prerogative, of being the first asserters in every great vindication. For me, as farre as my part leads me, I have already my greatest gain, assurance and inward satisfaction to have don in this nothing unworthy of an honest life, and studies well employ'd. With what event among the wise and right understanding handfull of men, I am secure. But how among the drove of



Custom and Prejudice this will be relisht, by such whose capacity, since their youth run ahead into the easie creek of a System or a Medulla, sayls there at will under the blown physiognomy of their unlabour'd rudiments, for them, what  
5 their tast will be, I have also surety sufficient, from the entire league that hath bin ever between formal ignorance and grave obstinacie. Yet when I remember the little that our Saviour could prevail about this doctrine of Charity against the crabbed textuists of his time, I make no wonder, but rest con-  
10 fident that who so prefers either Matrimony, or other Ordinance before the good of man and the plain exigence of Charity, let him professe Papist, or Protestant, or what he will, he is no better then a Pharise, and understands not the Gospel: whom as a misinterpreter of Christ I openly protest  
15 against; and provoke him to the trial of this truth before all the world: and let him bethink him withall how he will soder up the shifting flaws of his ungirt permissions, his venial and unvenial dispences, wherwith the Law of God pardoning and unpardoning hath bin shamefully branded,  
20 for want of heed in glossing, to have eluded and baffl'd out all Faith and chastity from the mariagebed of that holy seed, with politick and judicial adulteries. I seek not to seduce the simple and illiterat; my errand is to find out the choisest and the learnedest, who have this high gift of wisdom to answer  
25 solidly, or to be convinc't. I crave it from the piety, the learning and the prudence which is hous'd in this place. It might perhaps more fitly have bin writt'n in another tongue: and I had don so, but that the esteem I have of my Countries

judgement, and the love I beare to my native language to  
serv it first with what I endeavour, made me speak it thus,  
ere I assay the verdict of outlandish readers. And perhaps  
also heer I might have ended nameles, but that the addresse  
5 of these lines chiefly to the Parliament of *England* might have  
seem'd ingratefull not to acknowledge by whose Religious  
care, unwearied watchfulness, couragious and heroick resolu-  
tions, I enjoy the peace and studious leisure to remain,

*The Honourer and Attendant of their Noble*

10 *worth and vertues,*

John Milton.

The  
Doctrine and Discipline  
of Divorce;

Restor'd to the good of both Sexes.

---

I. BOOKE.

---

The Preface.

*That Man is the occasion of his owne miseries, in most of those evils which hee imputes to Gods inflicting. The absurdity of our canonists in their decrees about divorce. The Christian imperiall Lawes fram'd with more Equity.*  
5 *The opinion of Hugo Grotius, and Paulus Fagius: And the purpose in generall of this Discourse.*

MANY men, whether it be their fate, or fond opinion, easily perswade themselves, if God would but be pleas'd a while to withdraw his just punishments from us, and to restrain what power either the  
10 devill, or any earthly enemy hath to work us woe, that then mans nature would find immediate rest and releasement from all evils. But verily they who think so, if they be such as have a mind large enough to take into their thoughts a

generall survey of human things, would soon prove themselves in that opinion farre deceiv'd. For though it were granted us by divine indulgence to be exempt from all that can be harmfull to us from without, yet the perversnesse of  
5 our folly is so bent, that we should never lin hammering out of our owne hearts, as it were out of a flint, the seeds and sparkles of new misery to our selves, till all were in a blaze againe. And no marvell if out of our own hearts, for they are evill; but ev'n out of those things which God meant us, either  
10 for a principall good, or a pure contentment, we are still hatching and contriving upon our selves matter of continuall sorrow and perplexitie. What greater good to man then that revealed rule, whereby God vouchsafes to shew us how he would be worshipt? And yet that not rightly understood,  
15 became the cause that once a famous man in *Israel* could not but oblige his conscience to be the sacrificer, or if not, the jaylor of his innocent and only daughter. And was the cause oft-times that Armies of valiant men have given up their throats to a heathenish enemy on the Sabbath day: fondly  
20 thinking their defensive resistance to be as then a work unlawfull. What thing more instituted to the solace and delight of man then marriage? and yet the mis-interpreting of some Scripture directed mainly against the abusers of the Law for divorce giv'n by *Moses*, hath chang'd the blessing of matrimony not seldome into a familiar and co-inhabiting mischiefe;  
25 at least into a drooping and disconsolate household captivity, without refuge or redemption. So ungovern'd and so wild a race doth superstition run us from one extreme of

abused liberty into the other of unmercifull restraint. For although God in the first ordaining of marriage, taught us to what end he did it, in words expresly implying the apt and cheerfull conversation of man with woman, to comfort and  
5 refresh him against the evill of solitary life, not mentioning the purpose of generation till afterwards, as being but a secondary end in dignity, though not in necessity; yet now, if any two be but once handed in the Church, and have tasted in any sort the nuptiall bed, let them find themselves never  
10 so mistak'n in their dispositions through any error, concealment, or misadventure, that through their different tempers, thoughts, and constitutions, they can neither be to one another a remedy against lonelines, nor live in any union or contentment all their dayes, yet they shall, so they be but  
15 found suitably weapon'd to the least possibility of sensuall enjoyment, be made, spight of *antipathy* to fadge together, and combine as they may to their unspeakable wearisomnes and despaire of all sociable delight in the ordinance which God establisht to that very end. What a calamity is this, and  
20 as the Wise-man, if he were alive, would sigh out in his own phrase, what a *sore evill is this under the Sunne!* All which we can referre justly to no other author then the Canon Law and her adherents, not consulting with charitie, the interpreter and guide of our faith, but resting in the meere element  
25 of the Text; doubtles by the policy of the devill to make that gracious ordinance become unsupportable, that what with men not daring to venture upon wedlock, and what with men wearied out of it, all inordinate licence might abound. It was

for many ages that mariage lay in disgrace with most of the ancient Doctors, as a work of the flesh, almost a defilement, wholly deny'd to Priests, and the second time dissuaded to all, as he that reads *Tertullian* or *Jerom* may see at large.

5 Afterwards it was thought so Sacramentall, that no adultery or desertion could dissolve it; and this is the sense of our Canon Courts in *England* to this day, but in no other reformed Church els: yet there remains in them also a burden on it as hevie as the other two were disgracefull or super-

10 stitious, and of as much iniquity, crossing a Law not onely writt'n by *Moses*, but character'd in us by nature, of more antiquity and deeper ground then marriage it selfe; which Law is to force nothing against the faultles proprieties of nature: yet that this may be colourably done, our Saviours

15 words touching divorce, are as it were congeal'd into a stony rigor, inconsistent both with his doctrine and his office, and that which he preacht onely to the conscience, is by Canon-icall tyranny snatcht into the compulsive censure of a judi-

20 ciall Court; where Laws are impos'd even against the venerable and secret power of natures impression, to love what ever cause be found to loath. Which is a hainous barbarisme both against the honour of mariage, the dignity of man and his soule, the goodnes of Christianitie, and all the humane respects of civilitie. Notwithstanding that some the wisest

25 and gravest among the Christian Emperours, who had about them, to consult with, those of the Fathers then living, who for their learning and holines of life are still with us in great renowne, have made their statutes and edicts concerning this

debate, far more easie and relenting in many necessary cases, wherein the Canon is inflexible. And *Hugo Grotius*, a man of these times, one of the best learned, seems not obscurely to adhere in his perswasion to the equity of those Imperiall  
5 decrees, in his notes upon the *Evangelists*, much allaying the outward roughnesse of the Text, which hath for the most part been too immoderately expounded; and excites the diligence of others to enquire further into this question, as containing many points that have not yet been explain'd. Which  
10 ever likely to remain intricate and hopelesse upon the suppositions commonly stuck to, the authority of *Paulus Fagius*, one so learned and so eminent in *England* once, if it might perswade, would strait acquaint us with a solution of these differences, no lesse prudent then compendious. He in his  
15 comment on the *Pentateuch* doubted not to maintain that divorces might be as lawfully permitted by the Magistrate to Christians, as they were to the Jewes. But because he is but briefe, and these things of great consequence not to be kept obscure, I shall conceive it nothing above my duty either for  
20 the difficulty or the censure that may passe thereon, to communicate such thoughts as I also have had, and do offer them now in this generall labour of reformation, to the candid view both of Church and Magistrate; especially because I see it the hope of good men, that those irregular and unspirituall  
25 Courts have spun their utmost date in this Land; and some beter course must now be constituted. This therefore shall be the task and period of this discourse to prove, first that other reasons of divorce besides adultery, were by the Law of

*Moses*, and are yet to be allow'd by the Christian Magistrate as a peece of justice, and that the words of Christ are not hereby contraried. Next, that to prohibit absolutely any divorce whatsoever except those which *Moses* excepted, is  
5 against the reason of Law, as in due place I shall shew out of *Fagius* with many additions. He therefore who by adventuring shall be so happy as with successe to light the way of such an expedient liberty and truth as this, shall restore the much wrong'd and over-sorrow'd state of matrimony, not  
10 onely to those mercifull and life-giving remedies of *Moses*, but, as much as may be, to that serene and blisfull condition it was in at the beginning; and shall deserve of all apprehensive men (considering the troubles and distempers which for want of this insight have bin so oft in Kingdomes, in States,  
15 and Families) shall deserve to be reck'n'd among the publick benefactors of civill and humane life; above the inventors of wine and oyle; for this is a far dearer, far nobler, and more desirable cherishing to mans life, unworthily expos'd to sadness and mistake, which he shall vindicate. Not that licence  
20 and levity and unconsented breach of faith should herein be countnanc't, but that some conscionable and tender pitty might be had of those who have unwarily in a thing they never practiz'd before, made themselves the bondmen of a luckles and helples matrimony. In which Argument he  
25 whose courage can serve him to give the first onset, must look for two severall oppositions: the one from those who having sworn themselves to long custom and the letter of the Text, will not out of the road: the other from those whose



grosse and vulgar apprehensions conceit but low of matrimoniall purposes, and in the work of male and female think they have all. Neverthelesse, it shall be here sought by due wayes to be made appeare, that those words of God in the  
5 institution, promising a meet help against lonelines; and those words of Christ, *That his yoke is easie and his burden light*, were not spoken in vain; for if the knot of marriage may in no case be dissolv'd but for adultery, all the burd'ns and services of the Law are not so intolerable. This onely is  
10 desir'd of them who are minded to judge hardly of thus maintaining, that they would be still and heare all out, nor think it equall to answer deliberate reason with sudden heat and noise; remembring this, that many truths now of reverend esteem and credit, had their birth and beginning once  
15 from singular and private thoughts; while the most of men were otherwise posset; and had the fate at first to be generally exploded and exclaim'd on by many violent opposers; yet I may erre perhaps in soothing my selfe that this present truth reviv'd, will deserve on all hands to be not sinisterly  
20 receiv'd, in that it undertakes the cure of an inveterate disease crept into the best part of humane societie: and to doe this with no smarting corrosive, but with a smooth and pleasing lesson, which receiv'd hath the vertue to soften and dispell rooted and knotty sorrowes: and without inchantment if that  
25 be fear'd, or spell us'd, hath regard at once both to serious pittie, and upright honesty; that tends to the redeeming and restoring of none but such as are the object of compassion; having in an ill houre hamper'd themselves to the utter dis-

patch of all their most beloved comforts and repose for this lives term. But if we shall obstinately dislike this new overture of unexpected ease and recovery, what remains but to deplore the frowardnes of our hopeles condition, which  
 5 neither can endure the estate we are in, nor admit of remedy either sharp or sweet. Sharp we our selves distast; and sweet, under whose hands we are, is scrupl'd and suspected as too lushious. In such a posture Christ found the *Jews*, who were neither won with the austerity of *John the Baptist*, and  
 10 thought it too much licence to follow freely the charming pipe of him who sounded and proclaim'd liberty and reliefe to all distresses: yet Truth in some age or other will find her witnes, and shall be justify'd at last by her own children.

---

## CHAP. I.

*The Position. Prov'd by the Law of Moses. That Law expounded and asserted to a morall and charitable use, first*  
 15 *by Paulus Fagius; next with other additions.*

**T**O remove therfore if it be possible, this great and sad oppression which through the strictnes of a literall interpreting hath invaded and disturb'd the dearest  
 20 and most peaceable estate of household society, to the overburdening, if not the over-whelming of many Christians better worth then to be so deserted of the Churches considerate care, this position shall be laid down; first proving, then answering what may be objected either from Scripture  
 25 or light of reason.

*That indisposition, unfitnes, or contrariety of mind, arising from a cause in nature unchangeable, hindring and ever likely to hinder the main benefits of conjugall society, which are solace and peace, is a greater reason of divorce then natural frigidity, especially if there be no children, and that there be mutuall consent.*

This I gather from the Law in Deut. 24. 1. *When a man hath tak'n a wife and married her, and it come to passe that she find no favour in his eyes, because he hath found some*  
 10 *uncleanesse in her, let him write her a bill of divorcement, and give it in her hand, and send her out of his house, &c.*  
 This Law, if the words of Christ may be admitted into our beleeve, shall never while the world stands, for him be abrogated. First therefore I here set down what learned *Fagius*  
 15 *hath observ'd on this Law; The Law of God, saith he, permitted divorce for the help of human weaknes. For every one that of necessity separats, cannot live single. That Christ deny'd divorce to his own, hinders not; for what is that to the unregenerate, who hath not attain'd such perfection? Let*  
 20 *not the remedy be despis'd which was giv'n to weaknes. And when Christ saith, who marries the divorc't, commits adultery, it is to be understood if he had any plot in the divorce.*  
 The rest I reserve untill it be disputed, how the Magistrate is to doe herein. From hence we may plainly discern a two-  
 25 *fold consideration in this Law. First the end of the Lawgiver, and the proper act of the Law to command or to allow something just and honest, or indifferent. Secondly, his sufferance from some accidental result of evill by this allowance,*

which the Law cannot remedy. For if this Law have no other end or act but onely the allowance of a sin, though never to so good intention, that Law is no Law but sin muffl'd in the robe of Law, or Law disguis'd in the loose  
 5 garment of sin. Both which are too foule *Hypotheses* to save the *Phænomenon* of our Saviours answer to the Pharises about this matter. And I trust anon by the help of an infalible guide to perfet such *Prutenick* tables as shall mend the *Astronomy* of our wide expositors.

- 10 The cause of divorce mention'd in the Law is translated *some uncleannesse*; but in the Hebrew it sounds *nakednes of ought, or any reall nakednes*: which by all the learned interpreters is refer'd to the mind, as well as to the body. And what greater nakednes or unfitnes of mind then that which  
 15 hinders ever the solace and peacefull society of the married couple, and what hinders that more then the unfitnes and defectiveness of an unconjugal mind. The cause therfore of divorce expres't in the position cannot but agree with that describ'd in the best and equalest sense of *Moses* Law. Which  
 20 being a matter of pure charity, is plainly moral, and more now in force then ever: therefore surely lawfull. For if under the Law such was Gods gracious indulgence, as not to suffer the ordinance of his goodnes and favour, through any error to be ser'd and stigmatiz'd upon his servants to their misery  
 25 and thraldome, much lesse will he suffer it now under the covenant of grace, by abrogating his former grant of remedy and releef. But the first institution will be objected to have ordain'd mariage inseparable. To that a little patience untill

this first part have amply discours't the grave and pious reasons of this divorsive Law; and then I doubt not but with one gentle stroking to wipe away ten thousand teares out of the life of man. Yet thus much I shall now insist on, that  
 5 what ever the institution were, it could not be so enormous, nor so rebellious against both nature and reason as to exalt it selfe above the end and person for whom it was instituted.

---

## CHAP. II.

*The first reason of this Law grounded on the prime reason of matrimony. That no cov'nant whatsoever obliges against  
 10 the main end both of it self, and of the parties cov'nanting.*

**F**OR all sense and equity reclaims that any Law or Cov'nant how solemne or strait soever, either between God and man, or man and man, though of Gods joyning, should bind against a prime and principall  
 15 scope of its own institution, and of both or either party cov'nanting: neither can it be of force to ingage a blameles creature to his own perpetuall sorrow, mistak'n for his expected solace, without suffering charity to step in and doe a confest good work of parting those whom nothing holds together,  
 20 but this of Gods joyning, falsly suppos'd against the expresse end of his own ordinance. And what his chiefe end was of creating woman to be joynd with man, his own instituting words declare, and are infallible to informe us what is mariage and what is no mariage: unlesse we can think them  
 25 set there to no purpose: *It is not good*, saith he, *that man*

*should be alone; I will make him a help meet for him.* From which words so plain, lesse cannot be concluded, nor is by any learned Interpreter, then that in Gods intention a meet and happy conversation is the chieftest and the noblest end of  
5 mariage: for we find here no expression so necessarily implying carnall knowledge, as this prevention of lonelines to the mind and spirit of man. To this *Fagius, Calvin, Pareus, Rivetus*, as willingly and largely assent as can be wisht. And indeed it is a greater blessing from God, more worthy so ex-  
10 cellent a creature as man is, and a higher end to honour and sanctifie the league of marriage, whenas the solace and satisfaction of the mind is regarded and provided for before the sensitive pleasing of the body. And with all generous persons married thus it is, that where the mind and person pleases  
15 aptly, there some unaccomplishment of the bodies delight may be better born with, then when the mind hangs off in an unclosing disproportion, though the body be as it ought; for there all corporall delight will soon become unsavoury and contemptible. And the solitarines of man, which God had  
20 namely and principally order'd to prevent by mariage, hath no remedy, but lies under a worse condition then the loneliest single life; for in single life the absence and remotenes of a helper might inure him to expect his own comforts out of himselfe or to seek with hope; but here the continuall  
25 sight of his deluded thoughts without cure, must needs be to him, if especially his complexion incline him to melancholy, a daily trouble and pain of losse in som degree like that which Reprobats feel. Lest therefore so noble a creature

as man should be shut up incurably under a worse evill by an easie mistake in that ordinance which God gave him to remedy a lesse evill, reaping to himselfe sorrow while he went to rid away solitarines, it cannot avoid to be concluded, that if  
 5 the woman be naturally so of disposition, as will not help to remove, but help to increase that same God-forbidd'n loneliness which will in time draw on with it a generall discomfort and dejection of mind, not beseeming either Christian profession or morall conversation, unprofitable and dangerous to the Common-wealth, when the houshold estate, out of  
 10 which must flourish forth the vigor and spirit of all publick enterprizes, is so ill contented and procur'd at home, and cannot be supported; such a mariage can be no mariage whereto the most honest end is wanting: and the agrieved  
 15 person shall doe more manly, to be extraordinary and singular in claiming the due right whereof he is frustrated, then to piece up his lost contentment by visiting the Stews, or stepping to his neighbours bed, which is the common shift in this mis-fortune; or els by suffering his usefull life to wast away,  
 20 and be lost under a secret affliction of an unconscionable size to humane strength. Against all which evils the mercy of this Mosaick Law was graciously exhibited.

### CHAP. III.

*The ignorance and iniquity of Canon Law, providing for the right of the body in mariage, but nothing for the wrongs  
 25 and greevances of the mind. An objection, that the mind should be better lookt to before contract, answered.*

**H**OW vain therefore is it, and how preposterous in the Canon Law to have made such carefull provision against the impediment of carnall performance, and to have had no care about the unconverted inability of mind, so defective to the purest and most sacred end of matrimony: and that the vessell of voluptuous enjoyment must be made good to him that has tak'n it upon trust without any caution, when as the mind from whence must flow the acts of peace and love, a far more pretious mixture then the quintessence of an excrement, though it be found never so deficient and unable to performe the best duty of marriage in a cheerfull and agreeable conversation, shall be thought good enough, how ever flat and melancholious it be, and must serve, though to the eternall disturbance and languishing of him that complains him. Yet wisdom and charity waighing Gods own institution, would think that the pining of a sad spirit wedded to lonelines should deserve to be free'd, aswell as the impatience of a sensuall desire so providently reliev'd. Tis read to us in the Liturgy, that *we must not marry to satisfie the fleshly appetite, like brute beasts that have no understanding*; but the Canon so runs, as if it dreamt of no other matter then such an appetite to be satisfy'd; for if it happen that nature hath stopt or extinguisht the veins of sensuality, that marriage is annull'd. But though all the faculties of the understanding and conversing part after triall appeare to be so ill and so aversly met through natures unalterable working, as that neither peace, nor any sociable con-



tentment can follow, tis as nothing, the contract shall stand as firme as ever, betide what will. What is this but secretly to instruct us, that however many grave reasons are pretended to the married life, yet that nothing indeed is thought worth  
5 regard therein, but the prescrib'd satisfaction of an irrationall heat; which cannot be but ignominious to the state of marriage, dishonourable to the undervalu'd soule of man, and even to Christian doctrine it selfe. While it seems more mov'd at the disappointing of an impetuous nerve, then at  
10 the ingenuous grievance of a mind unreasonably yoakt; and to place more of marriage in the channell of concupiscence, then in the pure influence of peace and love, whereof the souls lawfull contentment is the onely fountain.

But some are ready to object, that the disposition ought  
15 seriously to be consider'd before. But let them know again, that for all the warinesse can be us'd, it may yet befall a discreet man to be mistak'n in his choice, and we have plenty of examples. The sobrest and best govern'd men are least practiz'd in these affairs; and who knowes not that the bash-  
20 full mutenes of a virgin may oft-times hide all the unliveliness and naturall sloth which is really unfit for conversation; nor is there that freedom of accesse granted or presum'd, as may suffice to a perfect discerning till too late: and where any indisposition is suspected, what more usuall then the per-  
25 swasion of friends, that acquaintance, as it increases, will amend all. And lastly, it is not strange though many who have spent their youth chastly, are in some things not so quick-sighted, while they hast too eagerly to light the nup-

tiall torch; nor is it therefore that for a modest error a man should forfeit so great a happines, and no charitable means to release him. Since they who have liv'd most loosely by reason of their bold accustoming, prove most succesfull in  
 5 their matches, because their wild affections unsetling at will, have been as so many divorces to teach them experience. When as the sober man honouring the appearance of modesty, and hoping well of every sociall vertue under that veile, may easily chance to meet, if not with a body impenetrable,  
 10 yet often with a mind to all other due conversation inaccessible, and to all the more estimable and superior purposes of matrimony uselesse and almost liveles: and what a solace, what a fit help such a consort would be through the whole life of a man, is lesse pain to conjecture then to have ex-  
 15 perience.

---

CHAP. IIII.

*The Second Reason of this Law, because without it, mariage as it happ'ns oft is not a remedy of that which it promises, as any rationall creature would expect. That mariage, if we pattern from the beginning as our Saviour bids, was  
 20 not properly the remedy of lust, but the fulfilling of conjugall love and helpfulnes.*

**A**ND that we may further see what a violent and cruell thing it is to force the continuing of those together, whom God and nature in the gentlest end  
 25 of mariage never joynd, divers evils and extremities that fol-

low upon such a compulsion, shall here be set in view. Of evils the first and greatest is, that hereby a most absurd and rash imputation is fixt upon God and his holy Laws, of con-  
niving and dispensing with open and common adultery  
5 among his chosen people; a thing which the rankest politician would think it shame and disworship, that his Laws should countenance; how and in what manner this comes to  
passe, I shall reserve, till the course of method brings on the unfolding of many Scriptures. Next the Law and Gospel  
10 are hereby made liable to more then one contradiction, which I referre also thither. Lastly, the supreme dictate of charitie is hereby many wayes neglected and violated. Which I shall  
forthwith addresse to prove. First we know St. *Paul* saith,  
*It is better to marry then to burn.* Mariage therfore was  
15 giv'n as a remedy of that trouble: but what might this burning mean? Certainly not the meer motion of carnall lust, not the meer goad of a sensitive desire; God does not principally  
take care for such cattell. What is it then but that desire which God put into *Adam* in Paradise before he knew the  
20 sin of incontinence; that desire which God saw it was not good that man should be left alone to burn in; the desire and  
longing to put off an unkindly solitarines by uniting another body, but not without a fit soule to his in the cheerfull society  
of wedlock. Which if it were so needfull before the fall, when  
25 man was much more perfect in himselfe, how much more is it needfull now against all the sorrows and casualties of this  
life to have an intimate and speaking help, a ready and re-  
viving associate in marriage: whereof who misses by chanc-

ing on a mute and spiritles mate, remains more alone then before, and in a burning lesse to be contain'd then that which is fleshly and more to be consider'd; as being more deeply rooted even in the faultles innocence of nature. As for that  
5 other burning, which is but as it were the venom of a lusty and over-abounding concoction, strict life and labour, with the abatement of a full diet may keep that low and obedient enough: but this pure and more inbred desire of joyning to it selfe in conjugall fellowship a fit conversing soul (which  
10 desire is properly call'd love) *is stronger then death*, as the spouse of Christ thought, *many waters cannot quench it, neither can the floods drown it*. This is that rationall burning that mariage is to remedy, not to be allay'd with fasting, nor with any penance to be subdu'd, which how can he  
15 assuage who by mis-hap hath met the most unmeetest and unsutable mind? Who hath the power to struggle with an intelligible flame, not in paradise to be resisted, become now more ardent, by being fail'd of what in reason it lookt for; and even then most unquencht, when the importunity of a  
20 provender burning is well enough appeas'd; and yet the soule hath obtained nothing of what it justly desires. Certainly such a one forbidd'n to divorce, is in effect forbidd'n to marry, and compell'd to greater difficulties then in a single life; for if there be not a more human burning which mariage must  
25 satisfie, or els may be dissolv'd, then that of copulation, mariage cannot be honorable for the meet reducing and terminating of lust between two: seeing many beasts in voluntary and chosen couples, live together as unadulterously, and are

as truly married in that respect. But all ingenuous men will see that the dignity & blessing of marriage is plac't rather in the mutual enjoyment of that which the wanting soul needfully seeks, then of that which the plenteous body would joyfully give away. Hence it is that *Plato* in his festival discours  
5 brings in *Socrates* relating what he fain'd to have learnt from the Prophetesse *Diotima*, how *Love* was the sonne of *Penury*, begot of *Plenty* in the garden of *Jupiter*. Which divinely sorts with that which in effect *Moses* tells us, that *Love* was the son  
10 of *Lonelines*, begot in Paradise by that sociable and helpfull aptitude which God implanted between man and woman toward each other. The same also is that burning mention'd by *S. Paul*, whereof marriage ought to be the remedy; the Flesh hath other mutuall and easie curbs which are in the  
15 power of any temperate man. When therfore this originall and sinles *Penury* or *Lonelines* of the soul cannot lay it selfe down by the side of such a meet and acceptable union as God ordain'd in marriage, at least in some proportion, it cannot conceive and bring forth *Love*, but remains utterly unmar-  
20 ried under a formall wedlock, and still burnes in the proper meaning of *S. Paul*. Then enters *Hate*, not that Hate that sins, but that which onely is naturall dissatisfaction and the turning aside from a mistaken object: if that mistake have done injury, it fails not to dismisse with recompence; for to retain  
25 still, and not be able to love, is to heap up more injury. Thence this wise and pious Law of dismission now defended took beginning: He therfore who lacking of his due in the most native and human end of marriage, thinks it better to part then

to live sadly and injuriously to that cheerfull covnant (for not to be belov'd & yet retain'd, is the greatest injury to a gentle spirit) he I say who therfore seeks to part, is one who highly honours the married life, and would not stain it: and the  
 5 reasons which now move him to divorce, are equall to the best of those that could first warrant him to marry; for, as was plainly shewn, both the hate which now diverts him and the loneliness which leads him still powerfully to seek a fit help, hath not the least grain of a sin in it, if he be worthy to  
 10 understand himselfe.

---

## CHAP. V.

*The Third Reason of this Law, because without it, he who hath happn'd where he finds nothing but remediles of-fences and discontents, is in more and greater temptations then ever before.*

15 **T**HIRDLY, Yet it is next to be fear'd, if he must be still bound without reason by a deafe rigor, that when he perceives the just expectance of his mind defeated, he will begin even against Law to cast about where he may find his satisfaction more compleat, unlesse he be a  
 20 thing heroically vertuous, and that are not the common lump of men for whom chiefly the Laws ought to be made, though not to their sins yet to their unsinning weaknesses, it being above their strength to endure the lonely estate, which while they shun'd, they are fal'n into. And yet there follows upon  
 25 this a worse temptation; for if he be such as hath spent his

youth unblamably, and layd up his chieftest earthly comforts in the enjoyment of a contented mariage, nor did neglect that furdurance which was to be obtain'd therein by constant prayers, when he shall find himselfe bound fast to an uncom-  
 5 plying discord of nature, or, as it oft happens, to an image of earth and fleam, with whom he lookt to be the copartner of a sweet and gladsome society and sees withall that his bondage is now inevitable, though he be almost the strongest Christian, he will be ready to despair in vertue, and mutin against  
 10 divine providence: and this doubtles is the reason of those lapses and that melancholy despair which we see in many wedded persons, though they understand it not, or pretend other causes, because they know no remedy, and is of extreme danger; therfore when human frailty surcharg'd, is at such a  
 15 losse, charity ought to venture much, and use bold physick, lest an over-tost faith endanger to shipwrack.

---

## CHAP. VI.

*The Fourth Reason of this Law, that God regards Love and Peace in the family, more then a compulsive performance of mariage, which is more broke by a grievous continu-*  
 20 *ance, then by a needfull divorce.*

**F**OURTHLY, Mariage is a cov'nant the very beeing wherof consists, not in a forc't cohabitation, and counterfet performance of duties, but in unfained love and peace. And of matrimoniall love no doubt but that was  
 25 chiefly meant, which by the ancient Sages was thus parabl'd,

That Love, if he be not twin-born, yet hath a brother wondrous like him, call'd *Anteros*: whom while he seeks all about, his chance is to meet with many fals and faining Desires that wander singly up and down in his likenes. By them  
5 in their borrow'd garb, Love, though not wholly blind, as Poets wrong him, yet having but one eye, as being born an Archer aiming, and that eye not the quickest in this dark region here below, which is not Loves proper sphere, partly out of the simplicity, and credulity which is native to him,  
10 often deceiv'd, imbraces and consorts him with these obvious and suborned striplings, as if they were his Mothers own Sons, for so he thinks them, while they suttly keep themselves most on his blind side. But after a while, as his manner is, when soaring up into the high Towr of his *Apogæum*,  
15 above the shadow of the earth, he darts out the direct rayes of his then most piercing eyesight upon the impostures, and trim disguises that were us'd with him, and discerns that this is not his genuin brother, as he imagin'd, he has no longer the power to hold fellowship with such a personated mate. For  
20 strait his arrows loose their golden heads, and shed their purple feathers, his silk'n breades untwine, and slip their knots and that original and firie vertue giv'n him by Fate, all on a sudden goes out and leaves him undeifi'd, and despoil'd of all his force: till finding *Anteros* at last, he kindles and repairs  
25 the almost faded ammunion of his Deity by the reflection of a coequal & *homogeneal* fire. Thus mine author sung it to me; and by the leave of those who would be counted the



only grave ones, this is no meer amatorious novel (though to be wise and skilful in these matters, men heretofore of greatest name in vertue, have esteemd it one of the highest arks that human contemplation circling upward, can make from  
5 the glassy Sea wheron she stands) but this is a deep and serious verity, shewing us that Love in mariage cannot live nor subsist, unlesse it be mutual; and where love cannot be, there can be left of wedlock nothing, but the empty husk of an outside matrimony; as undelightfull and unpleasing to God, as  
10 any other kind of hypocrisie. So farre is his command from tying men to the observance of duties, which there is no help for, but they must be dissembl'd. If *Salomons* advice be not overfrolick, *Live joyfully*, saith he, *with the wife whom thou lovest, all thy dayes, for that is thy portion*. How then, where  
15 we finde it impossible to rejoyce or to love, can we obey this precept? how miserably do we defraud our selves of that comfortable portion which God gives us, by striving vainly to glue an error together which God and nature will not joyn; adding but more vexation and violence to that blisfull society by our  
20 importunate superstition, that will not heark'n to *St. Paul*, *1 Cor. 7.* who speaking of mariage and divorce, determines plain enough in generall, that God therein *hath call'd us to peace* and not *to bondage*. Yea God himself commands in his Law more then once, and by his Prophet *Malachy*, as *Calvin*  
25 and the best translations read, that *he who hates let him divorce*; that is, he who cannot love: hence is it that the Rab- bins and *Maimonides* famous among the rest in a Book of his

set forth by *Buxtorfius*, tells us that *Divorce was permitted by Moses to preserve peace in mariage, and quiet in the family.* Surely the Jewes had their saving peace about them, aswell as we, yet care was tak'n that this wholsom provision for  
5 household peace should also be allow'd them; and must this be deny'd to Christians? O perversnes! that the Law should be made more provident of peacemaking then the Gospel! that the Gospel should be put to beg a most necessary help of mercy from the Law, but must not have it: and that to grind  
10 in the mill of an undelighted and servil copulation, must be the only forc't work of a Christian mariage, oft times with such a yokefellow, from whom both love and peace, both nature and Religion mourns to be separated. I cannot therefore be so diffident, as not securely to conclude, that he who  
15 can receive nothing of the most important helps in mariage, being therby disinabl'd to return that duty which is his, with a clear and hearty countenance; and thus continues to grieve whom he would not, and is no lesse griev'd, that man ought even for loves sake and peace to move Divorce upon good and  
20 liberall conditions to the divorc't. And it is a lesse breach of wedlock to part with wise and quiet consent betimes, then still to soile and profane that mystery of joy and union with a polluting sadnes and perpetuall distemper; for it is not the outward continuing of mariage that keeps whole that cov'-  
25 nant, but whosoever does most according to peace and love, whether in mariage, or in divorce, he it is that breaks mariage least; it being so often written, that *Love only is the fullfilling of every Commandment.*

## CHAP. VII.

*The Fifth Reason, that nothing more hinders and disturbs the whole life of a Christian, then a matrimony found to be uncurably unfit, and doth the same in effect that an Idolatrous match.*

5 **F**IFTHLY, as those Priests of old were not to be long in sorrow, or if they were, they could not rightly execute their function; so every true Christian in a higher order of Priesthood is a person dedicate to joy and peace, offering himself a lively sacrifice of praise and thanksgiving,  
10 and there is no Christian duty that is not to be season'd and set off with cheerfulness; which in a thousand outward and intermitting crosses may yet be done well, as in this vale of tears, but in such a bosome affliction as this, crushing the very foundation of his inmost nature, when he shall be forc't to  
15 love against a possibility, and to use dissimulation against his soule in the perpetuall and ceaseles duties of a husband, doubtles his whole duty of serving God must needs be blurr'd and tainted with a sad unpreparednesse and dejection of spirit, wherein God has no delight. Who sees not therfore how much  
20 more Christianity it would be to break by divorce that which is more broken by undue and forcible keeping, rather then *to cover the Altar of the Lord with continuall teares, so that he regardeth not the offering any more,* rather then that the whole worship of a Christian mans life should languish and  
25 fade away beneath the weight of an immeasurable grieve and discouragement. And because some think the childr'n of a

second matrimony succeeding a divorce would not be a holy seed, it hinder'd not the Jews from being so, and why should we not think them more holy then the off-spring of a former ill-twisted wedlock, begott'n only out of a bestiall necessitie  
5 without any true love or contentment, or joy to their parents, so that in some sense we may call them the *children of wrath* and anguish, which will as little conduce to their sanctifying, as if they had been bastards; for nothing more then disturbance of mind suspends us from approaching to God. Such a  
10 disturbance especially as both assaults our faith and trust in Gods providence, and ends, if there be not a miracle of vertue on either side, not onely in bitterness and wrath, the canker of devotion, but in a desperate and vitious carelesnes; when he sees himselfe without fault of his, train'd by a deceitfull bait  
15 into a snare of misery, betrai'd by an alluring ordinance, and then made the thrall of heavines and discomfort by an undivorcing Law of God, as he erroneously thinks, but of mans iniquitie, as the truth is; for that God preferres the free and cheerfull worship of a Christian, before the grievous and ex-  
20 acted observance of an unhappy marriage, besides that the generall maximes of Religion assure us, will be more manifest by drawing a parallell argument from the ground of divorcing an Idolatresse, which was, lest she should alienate his heart from the true worship of God: and what difference is  
25 there whether she pervert him to superstition by her enticing sorcery, or disinable him in the whole service of God through the disturbance of her unhelpfull and unfit society; and so drive him at last through murmuring and despair to thoughts

of Atheisme; neither doth it lessen the cause of separating in that the one willingly allures him from the faith, the other perhaps unwillingly drives him; for in the account of God it comes all to one that the wife looses him a servant; and therefore by all the united force of the *Decalogue* she ought to be disbanded, unlesse we must set mariage above God and charity, which is a doctrine of devils no lesse then forbidding to marry.

---

## CHAP. VIII.

*That an idolatrous Heretick ought to be divorc't after a convenient space giv'n to hope of conversion. That place of Corinth. 7. restor'd from a twofold erroneous exposition, and that the common expositors flatly contradict the morall law.*

AND here by the way to illustrate the whole question of divorce, ere this treatise end, I shall not be loath to spend a few lines in hope to give a full resolve of that which is yet so much controverted, whether an idolatrous heretick ought to be divorc't. To the resolving wherof we must first know that the *Jews* were commanded to divorce an unbelieving Gentile for two causes: first, because all other Nations, especially the *Canaanites* were to them unclean. Secondly, to avoid seducement. That other Nations were to the *Jews* impure, even to the separating of mariage, will appear out of *Exod.* 34. 16. *Deut.* 7. 3. 6. compar'd with *Ezra* 9. 2. also chap. 10. 10, 11. *Nehem.* 13. 30. This was the

ground of that doubt rais'd among the *Corinthians* by some of the Circumcision; Whether an unbeleever were not still to be counted an unclean thing, so as that they ought to divorce from such a person. This doubt of theirs S. *Paul* removes  
5 by an Evangelicall reason, having respect to that vision of S. *Peter*, wherein the distinction of clean and unclean being abolisht, all living creatures were sanctified to a pure and Christian use, and mankind especially, now invited by a general call to the cov'nant of grace. Therefore saith S. *Paul*,  
10 *The unbeleeving wife is sanctify'd by the husband*; that is, made pure and lawfull to his use; so that he need not put her away for fear lest her unbelief should defile him; but that if he found her love stil towards him, he might rather hope to win her. The second reason of that divorce was to avoid seducement, as is prov'd by comparing those places of the Law,  
15 to that which *Ezra* and *Nehemiah* did by divine warrant in compelling the *Jews* to forgoe their wives. And this reason is morall and perpetuall in the rule of Christian faith without evasion. Therefore saith the Apostle 2 *Cor.* 6. *Mis-yoke not*  
20 *together with infidels*, which is interpreted of mariage in the first place. And although the former legall pollution be now don off, yet there is a spirituall contagion in Idolatry as much to be shun'd; and though seducement were not to be fear'd, yet where there is no hope of converting, there alwayes ought  
25 to be a certain religious aversation and abhorring, which can no way sort with mariage. Therefore saith S. *Paul*, *What fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousnesse? what communion hath light with darknes? what concord hath*

*Christ with Belial? what part hath he that beleeveth with an infidel?* And in the next verse but one he moralizes and makes us liable to that command of *Isaiah*, *Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord,*  
5 *touch not the unclean thing, and I will receive ye.* And this command thus Gospelliz'd to us, hath the same force with that wheron *Ezra* grounded the pious necessity of divorcing. Neither had he other commission for what he did, then such a generall command in *Deut.* as this, nay not so direct as this;  
10 for he is bid there not to marry, but not bid to divorce, and yet we see with what a zeal and confidence he was the author of a generall divorce between the faithfull and unfaithfull seed. The Gospell is more plainly on his side according to three of the Evangelists, then the words of the Law; for where  
15 the case of divorce is handled with such a severity as was fittest to aggravate the fault of unbounded licence; yet still in the same chapter when it comes into question afterwards whether any civill respect, or natural relation which is dearest, may be our plea to divide, or hinder, or but delay our  
20 duty to religion, we heare it determin'd that father and mother, and wife also is not only to be hated, but forsak'n, if we mean to inherit the great reward there promis'd. Nor will it suffice to be put off by saying we must forsake them onely by not consenting or not complying with them, for that were  
25 to be don, and roundly too, though being of the same faith they should but seek, out of a fleshly tendernes to weak'n our Christian fortitude with worldly perswasions, or but to unsettle our constancie with timorous and softning suggestions:

as we may read with what a vehemence *Job* the patientest of men, rejected the desperat counsels of his wife; and *Moses* the meekest being throughly offended with the prophane speeches of *Zippora*, sent her back to her father. But if they  
5 shall perpetually at our elbow seduce us from the true worship of God, or defile and daily scandalize our conscience by their hopeles continuance in misbelief, then ev'n in the due progresse of reason, and that ever-equall proportion which justice proceeds by, it cannot be imagin'd that this cited place,  
10 commands lesse then a totall and finall separation from such an adherent; at least that no force should be us'd to keep them together: while we remember that God commanded *Abraham* to send away his irreligious wife and her son for the offences which they gave in a pious family. And it may  
15 be guest that *David* for the like cause dispos'd of *Michal* in such a sort, as little differ'd from a dismissal. Therefore against reiterated scandals and seducements which never cease, much more can no other remedy or retirement be found but absolute departure. For what kind of matrimony  
20 can that remain to be, what one dutie between such can be perform'd as it should be from the heart, when their thoughts and spirits flie asunder as farre as heaven from hell; especially if the time that hope should send forth her expected blossoms be past in vain. It will easily be true that a father or  
25 brother may be hated zealously, and lov'd civilly or naturally; for those duties may be perform'd at distance, and doe admit of any long absence: but how the peace and perpetuall cohabitation of marriage can be kept, how that benevolent and in-



imate communion of body can be held with one that must be hated with a most operative hatred, must be forsak'n and yet continually dwelt with and accompanied, he who can distinguish, hath the gift of an affection very odly divided and  
5 contriv'd: while others both just and wise, and *Salomon* among the rest, if they may not hate and forsake as *Moses* enjoyns, and the Gospell imports, will find it impossible not to love otherwise then will sort with the love of God, whose  
10 jealousy brooks no corrivall. And whether is more likely, that Christ bidding to forsake wife for religion, meant it by divorce as *Moses* meant it, whose Law grounded on morall reason, was both his office and his essence to maintain, or that he should bring a new morality into religion, not only new,  
15 but contrary to an unchangeable command, and dangerously derogating from our love & worship of God. As if when *Moses* had bid divorce absolutely, and Christ had said, hate & forsake, and his Apostle had said, no communion with Christ & *Belial*, yet that Christ after all this could be understood to say, divorce not, no not for religion, seduce, or se-  
20 duce not. What mighty and invisible Remora is this in matrimony able to demurre, and to contemne all the divorsive engines in heaven or earth. Both which may now passe away if this be true, for more then many jots or tittles, a whole morall Law is abolisht. But if we dare beleieve it is not, then  
25 in the method of religion, and to save the honour and dignity of our faith, we are to retreat, and gather up our selves from the observance of an inferior and civill ordinance, to the strict maintaining of a generall and religious command, which is

written, *Thou shalt make no cov'nant with them*, Deut. 7. 2.  
 3. and that cov'nant which cannot be lawfully made, we have  
 directions and examples lawfully to dissolve. Also Chron. 2.  
 19. *Shouldst thou love them that hate the Lord?* No doubt-  
 5 lesse: for there is a certain scale of duties, there is a certain  
 Hierarchy of upper and lower commands, which for want  
 of studying in right order, all the world is in confusion.

Upon these principles I answer, that a right beleever ought  
 to divorce an idolatrous heretick, unlesse upon better hopes:  
 10 however that it is in the beleivers choice to divorce or not.

The former part will be manifest thus; first, an apostate  
 idolater whether husband or wife seducing was to die by the  
 decree of God, Deut. 13. 6. 9. that mariage therfore God  
 himselfe dis-joyns: for others born idolaters the morall reason  
 15 of their dangerous keeping, and the incommunicable antag-  
 ony that is between Christ and *Belial*, will be sufficient to en-  
 force the commandment of those two inspir'd reformers,  
*Ezra* and *Nehemiah*, to put an Idolater away as well under  
 the Gospel.

20 The latter part, that although there be no seducement  
 fear'd, yet if there be no hope giv'n, the divorce is lawfull,  
 will appeare by this, that idolatrous marriage is still hatefull to  
 God, therefore still it may be divorc't by the patern of that war-  
 rant that *Ezra* had; and by the same everlasting reason: Nei-  
 25 ther can any man give an account wherefore, if those whom  
 God joyns, no man may separate, it should not follow, that,  
 whom he joyns not, but hates to joyn, those man ought to  
 separate. But saith the Lawyer, that which ought not have

been don, once don, avails. I answer, this is but a crotchet of the Law, but that brought against it, is plain Scripture. As for what Christ spake concerning divorce, tis confest by all knowing men, he meant onely between them of the same  
5 faith. But what shall we say then to S. *Paul*, who seemes to bid us not divorce an Infidell willing to stay? We may safely say thus; that wrong collections have been hitherto made out of those words by modern Divines. His drift, as was heard before, is plain: not to command our stay in mariage with an  
10 Infidel, that had been a flat renouncing of the religious and morall Law; but to inform the *Corinthians* that the body of an unbeleever was not defiling, if his desire to live in Christian wedlock shewd any likelihood that his heart was opening to the faith: and therfore advises to forbear departure so  
15 long, till nothing have been neglected to set forward a conversion: this I say he advises, and that with certain cautions; not commands: If we can take up so much credit for him, as to get him beleev'd upon his own word; for what is this els but his counsell in a thing indifferent, *to the rest speak I, not*  
20 *the Lord*; for though it be true that the Lord never spake it, yet from S. *Pauls* mouth we should have took it as a command, had not himself forewarn'd us, and disclaim'd; which, notwithstanding if we shall still avouch to be a command, he palpably denying it, this is not to expound S. *Paul*, but to out-  
25 face him. Neither doth it follow, but that the Apostle may interpose his judgement in a case of Christian liberty without the guilt of adding to Gods word. How doe we know marriage or single life to be of choice, but by such like words as

these, *I speak this by permission, not of commandment, I have no command of the Lord, yet I give my judgement.* Why shall not the like words have leave to signifie a freedom in this our present question, though *Beza* deny. Neither is  
5 the Scripture hereby lesse inspir'd because *S. Paul* confesses to have writt'n therein what he had not of command; for we grant that the Spirit of God led him thus to expresse himselfe to Christian prudence in a matter which God thought best to leave uncommanded. *Beza* therefore must be warily  
10 read when he taxes *S. Austine* of *Blasphemy* for holding that *S. Paul* spake heer as of a thing indifferent. But if it must be a command, I shall yet the more evince it to be a command that we should herein be left free: and that out of the Greek word us'd in the 12. v. which instructs us plainly, there must  
15 be a joynt assent and good liking on both sides; he that will not deprave the Text, must thus render it; *If a brother have an unbeleeving wife, and she joyne in consent to dwell with him* (which cannot utter lesse to us then a mutuall agreement) let him not put her away for the meer surmise of Judaicall uncleannes: and the reason follows, for the body of  
20 an infidell is not polluted, neither to benevolence, nor to procreation. Moreover, this note of mutual complacencie forbids all offer of seducement; which to a person of zeal cannot be attempted without great offence: if therefore seducement  
25 be fear'd, this place hinders not divorce. Another caution was put in this supposed command, of not bringing the beleever into *bondage* heerby, which doubtles might prove extreme, if Christian liberty and conscience were left to the humor of a

pagan staying at pleasure to play with, or to vex and wound with a thousand scandals and burdens, above strength to bear: If therefore the conceived hope of gaining a soul, come to nothing, then charity commands that the beleever be not  
5 wearied out with endlesse waiting under many grievances sore to his spirit; but that respect be had rather to the present suffering of a true Christian, then the uncertain winning of an obdur'd heretick. The counsell we have from *S. Paul* to hope, cannot countermand the moral and Evangelick charge  
10 we have from God to feare seducement, to separate from the misbeleever, the unclean, the obdurat. The Apostle wisheth us to hope, but does not send us a wooll-gathering after vain hope: he saith, *How knowest thou, O man, whether thou shalt save thy wife*, that is, till he try all due means, and set  
15 some reasonable time to himselfe after which he may give over washing an Ethiope, if he will heare the advice of the Gospell. *Cast not pearls before swine*, saith Christ himself. *Let him be to thee as a heathen. Shake the dust off thy feet.* If this be not enough, *hate and forsake*, what relation soever.  
20 And this also that follows, must appertain to the precept, *Let every man wherein he is call'd therein abide with God*, v. 24. that is, so walking in his inferior calling of mariage, as not by dangerous subjection to that ordinance, to hinder and disturb the higher calling of his Christianity. Last, and never too oft  
25 remembred, whether this be a command or an advice, we must looke that it be so understood, as not to contradict the least point of morall religion that God hath formerly commanded, otherwise what doe we but set the morall Law and

the Gospell at civill war together: and who then shall be able to serve those two masters?

---

## CHAP. IX.

*That adultery is not the greatest breach of matrimony, that there may be other violations as great.*

5 **N**OW whether Idolatry or Adultery be the greatest violation of mariage, if any demand, let him thus consider, that among Christian Writers touching matrimony, there be three chiefe ends thereof agreed on; Godly society, next civill, and thirdly, that of the marriage-  
10 bed. Of these the first in name to be the highest and most excellent, no baptiz'd man can deny; nor that Idolatry smites directly against this prime end, nor that such as the violated end is, such is the violation: but he who affirms adultery to be the highest breach, affirms the bed to be the highest of  
15 mariage, which is in truth a grosse and borish opinion, how common soever; as farre from the countnance of Scripture, as from the light of all clean philosophy, or civill nature. And out of question the cheerfull help that may be in mariage toward sanctity of life, is the purest, and so the noblest end of  
20 that contract: but if the particular of each person be consider'd, then of those three ends which God appointed, that to him is greatest which is most necessary: and mariage is then most brok'n to him, when he utterly wants the fruition of that which he most sought therein, whether it were religious,  
25 civill, or corporall society. Of which wants to do him right by divorce only for the last and meanest, is a perverse injury,

and the pretended reason of it as frigid as frigidity it selfe, which the *Code* and Canon are only sensible of. Thus much of this controversie. I now return to the former argument. And having shewn that disproportion, contrariety, or numnesse of minde may justly be divorc't, by proving already that  
 5 the prohibition therof opposes the expresse end of Gods institution, suffers not mariage to satisfie that intellectuall and innocent desire which God himselfe kindl'd in man to be the bond of wedlock, but only to remedy a sublunary and bestial  
 10 burning, which frugal diet without mariage would easily chast'n. Next that it drives many to transgresse the conjugall bed, while the soule wanders after that satisfaction which it had hope to find at home, but hath mis't. Or els it sits repining even to Atheism; finding it selfe hardly dealt with, but  
 15 misdeeming the cause to be in Gods Law, which is in mans unrighteous ignorance. I have shew'n also how it unties the inward knot of mariage, which is peace and love (if that can be unti'd which was never knit) while it aimes to keep fast the outward formalitie; how it lets perish the Christian man,  
 20 to compel impossibly the married man.

## CHAP. X.

*The Sixth Reason of this Law, that to prohibit divorce sought for natural causes is against nature.*

25 **T**HE sixt place declares this prohibition to be as respectlesse of human nature as it is of religion, and therefore is not of God. He teaches that an unlawfull mariage may be lawfully divorc't. And that those who hav-

ing thoroughly discern'd each others disposition which oft-times cannot be till after matrimony, shall then find a powerful reluctance and recoil of nature on either side blasting all the content of their mutuall society, that such persons are  
5 not lawfully married (to use the Apostles words) *Say I these things as a man, or saith not the Law also the same? for it is writt'n, Deut. 22. Thou shalt not sowe thy vineyard with divers seeds, lest thou defile both. Thou shalt not plow with an Oxe and an Asse together,* and the like. I follow the pat-  
10 tern of St. Pauls reasoning; *Doth God care for Asses and Oxen;* how ill they yoke together, *or is it not said altogether for our sakes? for our sakes no doubt this is writt'n.* Yea the Apostle himself in the forecited 2 Cor. 6. 14. alludes from that place of Deut. to forbid mis-yoking marriage; as by the  
15 Greek word is evident, though he instance but in one example of mis-matching with an Infidell: yet next to that what can be a fouler incongruity, a greater violence to the reverend secret of nature, then to force a mixture of minds that cannot unite, and to sowe the furrow of mans nativity with seed of  
20 two incoherent and uncombining dispositions; which act being kindly and voluntarie, as it ought, the Apostle in the language he wrote call'd *Eunoia*, and the Latines *Benevolence*, intimating the original therof to be in the understanding and the will; if not, surely there is nothing which might  
25 more properly be call'd a malevolence rather; and is the most injurious and unnaturall tribute that can be extorted from a person endew'd with reason, to be made pay out the best substance of his body, and of his soul too, as some think, when



either for just and powerfull causes he cannot like, or from unequall causes finds not recompence. And that there is a hidden efficacie of love and hatred in man as well as in other kinds, not morall, but naturall, which though not alwayes in  
5 the choyce, yet in the successe of mariage wil ever be most predominant, besides daily experience, the author of *Ecclesiasticus*, whose wisdom hath set him next the Bible, acknowledges, 13. 16. *A man, saith he, will cleave to his like.* But what might be the cause, whether each ones allotted  
10 *Genius* or proper Starre, or whether the supernall influence of Schemes and angular aspects or this elementall *Crisis* here below, whether all these jointly or singly meeting friendly, or unfriendly in either party, I dare not, with the men I am likest to clash, appear so much a Philosopher as to conjecture.  
15 The ancient proverb in *Homer* lesse abstruse intitles this worke of leading each like person to his like, peculiarly to God himselfe: which is plain anough also by his naming of a meet or like help in the first espousall instituted; and that every woman is meet for every man, none so absurd as to affirm.  
20 Seeing then there is indeed a twofold Seminary or stock in nature, from whence are deriv'd the issues of love and hatred distinctly flowing through the whole masse of created things, and that Gods doing ever is to bring the due likenesses and harmonies of his workes together, except when out of two  
25 contraries met to their own destruction, he moulds a third existence, and that it is error, or some evil Angel which either blindly or maliciously hath drawn together in two persons ill imbarckt in wedlock the sleeping discords and enmities of

nature lull'd on purpose with some false bait, that they may wake to agony and strife, later then prevention could have wisht, if from the bent of just and honest intentions beginning what was begun, and so continuing, all that is equall, all  
5 that is fair and possible hath been tri'd, and no accommodation likely to succeed, what folly is it still to stand combating and battering against invincible causes and effects, with evill upon evill, till either the best of our dayes be linger'd out, or ended with some speeding sorrow. The wise *Ecclesiasticus* advises  
10 rather, 37. 27. *My sonne, prove thy soule in thy life, see what is evill for it, and give not that unto it.* Reason he had to say so; for if the noysomnesse or disfigurement of body can soon destroy the sympathy of mind to wedlock duties, much more wil the annoyance and trouble of mind infuse it selfe into all  
15 the faculties and acts of the body, to render them invalid, unkindly, and even unholy against the fundamentall law book of nature, which *Moses* never thwarts, but reverences: therefore he commands us to force nothing against sympathy or naturall order, no not upon the most abject creatures; to shew  
20 that such an indignity cannot be offer'd to man without an impious crime. And certainly those divine meditating words of finding out a meet and like help to man, have in them a consideration of more then the indefinite likenesse of womanhood; nor are they to be made waste paper on, for the dul-  
25 nesse of Canon divinity: no nor those other allegorick precepts of beneficence fetcht out of the closet of nature to teach us goodnes and compassion in not compelling together unmatchable societies, or if they meet through mischance, by

all consequence to dis-joyn them, as God and nature signifies and lectures to us not onely by those recited decrees, but ev'n by the first and last of all his visible works; when by his divorcing command the world first rose out of Chaos, nor can  
 5 be renewed again out of confusion but by the separating of unmeet consorts.

---

## CHAP. XI.

*The seventh reason, That sometimes continuance in mariage may be evidently the shortning or endangering of life to either party, both Law and divinitie concluding, that life*  
 10 *is to be prefer'd before mariage the intended solace of life.*

**S**EVENTHLY, The Canon Law and Divines consent, that if either party be found contriving against anothers life, they may be sever'd by divorce; for a sin against the life of mariage, is greater then a sin against the  
 15 bed: the one destroyes, the other but defiles: The same may be said touching those persons who being of a pensive nature and cours of life, have sum'd up all their solace in that free and lightsome conversation which God and man intends in marriage: wherof when they see themselves depriv'd by meet-  
 20 ing an unsociable consort, they oft-times resent one anothers mistake so deeply, that long it is not ere grieve end one of them. When therfore this danger is foreseen, that the life is in perill by living together, what matter is it whether helps grieve, or wilfull practice be the cause; This is certain, that the  
 25 preservation of life is more worth then the compulsory keeping of mariage; and it is no lesse then crueltie to force a man

to remain in that state as the solace of his life, which he and his friends know will be either the undoing or the disheartening of his life. And what is life without the vigor and spiritfull exercise of life? how can it be usefull either to private or  
 5 publick employment? shall it therfore be quite dejected, though never so valuable, and left to moulder away in heaviness for the superstitious and impossible performance of an ill-driv'n bargain? Nothing more inviolable then vowes made to God, yet we read in *Numbers* that if a wife had made such  
 10 a vow, the meer will and authoritie of her husband might break it; how much more may he breake the error of his own bonds with an unfit and mistak'n wife, to the saving of his welfare, his life, yea his faith and vertue from the hazard of over-strong temptations; for if man be Lord of the Sabbath,  
 15 to the curing of a Fevor, can he be lesse then Lord of mariage in such important causes as these?

---

CHAP. XII.

*The eighth reason, It is probable, or rather certain, that every one who happ'ns to marry, hath not the calling, and therefore upon unfitnessse found and consider'd, force ought not*  
 20 *to be us'd.*

**E**IGHTLY, It is most sure that some ev'n of those who are not plainly defective in body, yet are destitute of all other marriageable gifts, and consequently have not the calling to marry; unlesse nothing be requisite  
 25 therto but a meer instrumentall body; which to affirm, is to that unanimous Covenant a reproach: yet it is as sure that

many such, not of their own desire, but by the perswasion of friends, or not knowing themselves, doe often enter into wedlock; where finding the difference at length between the duties of a married life, and the gifts of a single life; what  
 5 unfittes of mind, what wearisomnesse, what scruples and doubts to an incredible offence and displeasure are like to follow between, may be soon imagin'd: whom thus to shut up and immure and shut up together, the one with a mis-chosen mate, the other in a mistak'n calling, is not a cours  
 10 that Christian wisdom and tendernes ought to use. As for the custome that some parents and guardians have of forcing mariages, it will be better to say nothing of such a savage inhumanity, but only thus, that the Law which gives not all freedom of divorce to any creature endu'd with reason so  
 15 assassinated, is next in cruelty.

---

## CHAP. XIII.

*The ninth reason, Because mariage is not a meer carnall co-  
 ition, but a human Society, where that cannot reasonably  
 be had, there can be no true matrimony. Mariage compar'd  
 with all other cov'nants and vowes warrantably  
 20 broken for the good of man. Mariage the Papists Sacrament,  
 and unfit mariage the Protestants Idoll.*

NINTHLY, I suppose it will be allow'd us that  
 mariage is a human Society, and that all human  
 society must proceed from the mind rather than  
 25 the body, els it would be but a kind of animall or beastish

meeting; if the mind therefore cannot have that due company by mariage, that it may reasonably and humanly desire, that mariage can be no human society, but a certain formality; or guilding over of little better then a brutish congresse, and so  
5 in very wisdome and purenesse to be dissolv'd.

But mariage is more then human, *the Covenant of God*, Prov. 2. 17. therefore man cannot dissolve it. I answer, if it be more then human, so much the more it argues the chiefe society thereof to be in the soule rather then in the body, and  
10 the greatest breach therof to be unfittnesse of mind rather then defect of body: for the body can have least affinity in a covenant more then human, so that the reason of dissolving holds good the rather. Again, I answer, that the Sabbath is a  
15 breach wherof God hath farre more and oftner testify'd his anger, then for divorces, which from *Moses* to *Malachy* he never took displeasure at, nor then neither, if we mark the Text; and yet as oft as the good of man is concern'd, he not onely permits, but commands to break the Sabbath. What  
20 covenant more contracted with God, and lesse in mans power, then the vow which hath once past his lips? yet if it be found rash, if offensive, if unfruitfull either to Gods glory or the good of man, our doctrine forces not error and unwillingnes irksomly to keep it, but counsels wisdome and better  
25 thoughts boldly to break it; therefore to enjoyn the indissoluble keeping of a mariage found unfit against the good of man both soul and body, as hath bin evidenc't, is to make an Idol of mariage, to advance it above the worship of God and

the good of man, to make it a transcendent command, above both the second and the first Table, which is a most prodigious doctrine.

Next, wheras they cite out of the *Proverbs*, that it is the  
 5 *Covenant of God*, and therefore more then human, that consequence is manifestly false: for so the covenant which *Zedechiah* made with the Infidell King of *Babel*, is call'd the *Covenant of God*, Ezek. 17. 19. which would be strange to heare counted more then a human covenant. So every covenant be-  
 10 tween man and man, bound by oath, may be call'd the covenant of God, because God therein is attested. So of mariage he is the authour and the witnes; yet hence will not follow any divine astrictio more then what is subordinate to the glory of God and the main good of either party; for as the glory of  
 15 God and their esteemed fitnessse one for the other, was the motive which led them both at first to think without other revelation that God had joynd them together. So when it shall be found by their apparent unfitnesse, that their continuing to be man and wife is against the glory of God and  
 20 their mutuall happinesse, it may assure them that God never joyn'd them; who hath reveal'd his gracious will not to set the ordinance above the man for whom it was ordain'd: not to canonize mariage either as a tyrannesse or a goddessse over the enfranchiz'd life and soul of man: for wherin can God  
 25 delight, wherin be worshipt, wherein be glorify'd by the forcible continuing of an improper and ill-yoking couple? He that lov'd not to see the disparity of severall cattell at the plow, cannot be pleas'd with any vast unmeetnesse in mariage.

Where can be the peace and love which must invite God to such a house, may it not be fear'd that the not divorcing of such a helplesse disagreement, will be the divorcing of God finally from such a place? But it is a triall of our patience they  
5 say: I grant it: but which of *Jobs* afflictions were sent him with that law, that he might not use means to remove any of them if he could? And what if it subvert our patience and our faith too? Who shall answer for the perishing of all those soules perishing by stubborn expositions of particular and in-  
10 ferior precepts against the generall and supreme rule of charity? They dare not affirm that mariage is either a Sacrament, or a mystery, though all those sacred things give place to man, and yet they invest it with such an awfull sanctity, and give it such adamantine chains to bind with, as if it were to be  
15 worshipt like some Indian deity, when it can conferre no blessing upon us, but works more and more to our misery. To such teachers the saying of *S. Peter* at the Councell of *Jerusalem* will doe well to be apply'd: *Why tempt ye God to put a yoke upon the necks* of Christian men, which neither  
20 the *Jews*, Gods ancient people, *nor we are able to bear*: and nothing but unwary expounding hath brought upon us.

---

## CHAP. XIV.

*Considerations concerning Familisme, Antinomianisme, and why it may be thought that such opinions may proceed from the undue restraint of some just liberty, then which*  
25 *no greater cause to contemne discipline.*



**T**O these considerations this also may be added as no improbable conjecture; seeing that sort of men who follow *Anabaptism, Familism, Antinomianism*, and other fanatick dreams (if we understand them not amisse) be such most commonly as are by nature addicted to Religion, of life also not debausht, and that their opinions having full swinge, do end in satisfaction of the flesh, it may be come with reason into the thoughts of a wise man, whether all this proceed not partly, if not chiefly, from the restraint of some lawfull liberty, which ought to be giv'n men, and is deny'd them. As by Physick we learn in menstruous bodies, where natures current hath been stopt, that the suffocation and upward forcing of some lower part, affects the head and inward sense with dotage and idle fancies. And on the other hand, whether the rest of vulgar men not so religiously professing do not give themselvs much the more to whoredom and adulteries, loving the corrupt and venial discipline of clergie Courts, but hating to heare of perfect reformation: when as they foresee that then fornication shall be austere censur'd, adultery punisht, and mariage the appointed refuge of nature, though it hap to be never so incongruous and displeasing, must yet of force be worn out, when it can be to no other purpose but of strife and hatred, a thing odious to God. This may be worth the study of skilfull men in Theology, and the reason of things: and lastly to examine whether some undue and ill grounded strictnesse upon the blamelesse nature of man, be not the cause in those places where already reformation is, that the discipline of the Church so often and

so unavoidably brok'n, is brought into contempt and derision. And if it be thus, let those who are still bent to hold this obstinate *literality*, so prepare themselves as to share in the account for all these transgressions, when it shall be demanded at the last day by one who will scan and sift things with more then a literall wisdom of equity; for if these reasons be duly ponder'd, and that the Gospell is more jealous of laying on excessive burdens then ever the Law was, lest the soule of a Christian which is inestimable, should be overtempted and cast away, considering also that many properties of nature, which the power of regeneration it selfe never alters, may cause dislike of conversing even between the most sanctify'd, which continually grating in harsh tune together, may breed some jarre and discord, and that end in rancor and strife, a thing so opposite both to mariage and to Christianity, it would perhaps be lesse schandall to divorce a naturall disparity, then to link violently together an unchristian dissention, committing two ensnared soules inevitably to kindle one another, not with the fire of love, but with a hatred *inconcilable*, who were they dissevered, would be straight friends in any other relation. But if an alphabeticall servility must be still urged, it may so fall out, that the true Church may unwittingly use as much cruelty in forbidding to divorce, as the Church of Antichrist doth wilfully in forbidding to marry.

---

## THE SECOND BOOK.

---

### CHAP. I.

*The Ordinance of Sabbath and mariage compar'd. Hyperbole no unfrequent figure in the Gospel. Excesse cur'd by contrary excesse. Christ neither did, nor could abrogat the Law of divorce, but only reprove the abuse therof.*

5 **H**ITHERTO the Position undertaken hath bin declar'd, and prov'd by a Law of God, that Law prov'd to be moral, and unabolishable for many reasons equal, honest, charitable, just, annext therto. It follows now that those places of Scripture which have a seem-  
10 ing to revoke the prudence of *Moses*, or rather that mercifull decree of God, be forthwith explain'd and reconcil'd. For what are all these reasonings worth will some reply, whenas the words of Christ are plainly against all divorce, except *in case of fornication*. To whom he whose minde were to an-  
15 swer no more but this, *except also in case of charity*, might safely appeal to the more plain words of Christ in defence of so excepting. *Thou shalt doe no manner of worke* saith the commandment of the Sabbath. Yes saith Christ works of charity. And shall we be more severe in paraphrasing the  
20 considerat and tender Gospel, then he was in expounding the rigid and peremptory Law? What was ever in all appearance lesse made for man, and more for God alone then the Sab-

bath? yet when the good of man comes into the scales, we hear that voice of infinite goodnesse and benignity that *Sabbath was made for man, not man for Sabbath*. What thing ever was more made for man alone and lesse for God then  
5 mariage? And shall we load it with a cruel and senceles bondage utterly against both the good of man and the glory of God? Let who so will now listen, I want neither pall nor mitre, I stay neither for ordination nor induction, but in the firm faith of a knowing Christian, which is the best and truest  
10 endowment of the keyes, I pronounce, the man who shall bind so cruelly a good and gracious ordinance of God, hath not in that the Spirit of Christ. Yet that every text of Scripture seeming opposite may be attended with a due exposition, this other part ensues, and makes account to find no slender  
15 arguments for this assertion out of those very Scriptures, which are commonly urg'd against it.

First therefore let us remember as a thing not to be deny'd, that all places of Scripture wherein just reason of doubt arises from the letter, are to be expounded by considering upon  
20 what occasion every thing is set down: and by comparing other Texts. The occasion which induc't our Saviour to speak of divorce, was either to convince the extravagance of the Pharises in that point, or to give a sharp and vehement answer to a tempting question. And in such cases that we are not to  
25 repose all upon the literall terms of so many words, many instances will teach us: Wherin we may plainly discover how Christ meant not to be tak'n word for word, but like a wise Physician, administring one excesse against another to reduce

us to a perfect mean: Where the Pharises were strict, there Christ seems remisse; where they were too remisse, he saw it needfull to seem most severe: in one place he censures an unchast look to be adultery already committed: another time he  
5 passes over actuall adultery with lesse reproof then for an unchast look; not so heavily condemning secret weaknes, as open malice: So heer he may be justly thought to have giv'n this rigid sentence against divorce, not to cut off all remedy from a good man who finds himself consuming away in  
10 disconsolate and uninjoy'd matrimony, but to lay a bridle upon the bold abuses of those over-weening *Rabbies*; which he could not more effectually doe, then by a countersway of restraint curbing their wild exorbitance almost into the other extreme; as when we bow things the contrary way, to make  
15 them come to their naturall straitnesse. And that this was the only intention of Christ is most evident; if we attend but to his own words and protestation made in the same Sermon, not many verses before he treats of divorcing, that he came not to abrogate from the Law *one jot or tittle*, and denounces  
20 against them that shall so teach.

But S. *Luke*, the verse immediatly before going that of divorce inserts the same caveat, as if the latter could not be understood without the former; and as a witnesse to produce against this our wilfull mistake of abrogating, which must  
25 needs confirm us that what ever els in the political law of more special relation to the Jews might cease to us, yet that of those precepts concerning divorce, not one of them was repeal'd by the doctrine of Christ, unlesse we have vow'd not

to beleieve his own cautious and immediat profession; for if these our Saviours words inveigh against all divorce, and condemn it as adultery, except it be for adultery, and be not rather understood against the abuse of those divorces permitted in the Law, then is that Law of *Moses*, Deut. 24. 1. not onely repeal'd and wholly annull'd against the promise of Christ and his known profession, not to meddle in matters Judicial, but that which is more strange, the very substance and purpose of that Law is contradicted and convinc't both of  
 5 injustice and impurity, as having authoriz'd and maintain'd legall adultery by statute. *Moses* also cannot scape to be guilty of unequall and unwise decrees, punishing one act of secret adultery by death, and permitting a whole life of open adultery by Law. And albeit Lawyers write that some political edicts, though not approv'd, are yet allow'd to the scum  
 15 of the people and the necessity of the times; these excuses have but a weak pulse: for first, we read, not that the scoundrel people, but the choicest, the wisest, the holiest of that nation have frequently us'd these lawes, or such as these in the best and holiest times. Secondly, be it yeelded, that in matters not very bad or impure, a human law giver may slacken something of that which is exactly good, to the disposition of the people and the times: but if the perfect, the pure, the righteous law of God, for so are all his statutes and his judge-  
 20 ments, be found to have allow'd smoothly without any certain reprehension, that which Christ afterward declares to be adultery, how can we free this Law from the horrible en-  
 25 dightment of being both impure, unjust, and fallacious.

## CHAP. II.

*How divorce was permitted for hardnesse of heart, cannot be understood by the common exposition. That the Law cannot permit, much lesse enact a permission of sin.*

5 **N**EITHER will it serve to say this was permitted for the hardnes of their hearts, in that sense as it is usually explain'd, for the Law were then but a corrupt and erroneous School-master, teaching us to dash against a vitall maxim of religion, by doing foul evill in hope of some uncertain good.

10 This onely Text not to be match't again throughout the whole Scripture, wherby God in his perfect Law should seem to have granted to the hard hearts of his holy people under his owne hand, a civill immunity and free charter to live and die in a long successive adultery, under a covenant of works, till  
15 the *Messiah*, and then that indulgent permission to be strictly deny'd by a covnant of grace; besides the incoherence of such a doctrine, cannot, must not be thus interpreted, to the raising of a paradox never known til then, onely hanging by the twin'd thred of one doubtfull Scripture, against so many  
20 other rules and leading principles of religion, of justice, and purity of life. For what could be granted more either to the fear, or to the lust of any tyrant, or politician, then this authority of *Moses* thus expounded; which opens him a way at will to damme up justice, and not onely to admit of any  
25 *Romish* or *Austrian* dispences, but to enact a statute of that which he dares not seeme to approve, ev'n to legitimate vice, to make sinne it selfe, the ever alien & vassal sin, a free Cit-

izen of the Common-wealth, pretending onely these or these plausible reasons. And well he might, all the while that *Moses* shall be alledg'd to have done as much without shewing any reason at all. Yet this could not enter into the heart of

5 *David*, *Psal.* 94. 20. how any such authority as endeavours to *fashion wickednes by a law*, should derive it selfe from God. And *Isaiah* layes woe upon them that decree *unrighteous decrees*, 10. 1. Now which of these two is the better Lawgiver, and which deserves most a woe, he that gives out an edict

10 singly unjust, or he that confirms to generations a fixt and unmolested impunity of that which is not onely held to be unjust, but also unclean, and both in a high degree, not only as they themselves affirm, an injurious expulsion of one wife, but also an unclean freedom by more then a patent to wed

15 another adulterously? How can we therfore with safety thus dangerously confine the free simplicity of our Saviours meaning to that which meerly amounts from so many letters, whenas it can consist neither with his former and cautionary words, nor with other more pure and holy principles, nor

20 finally with the scope of charity, commanding by his expresse commission in a higher strain. But all rather of necessity must be understood as only against the abuse of that wise and ingenous liberty which *Moses* gave, and to terrifie a roaving conscience from sinning under that pretext.

## CHAP. III.

25 *That to allow sin by Law, is against the nature of Law, the end of the lawgiver and the good of the people. Impossible*



*therefore in the Law of God. That it makes God the author of sin, more then any thing objected by the Jesuits or Arminians against Predestination.*

5 **B**UT let us yet further examin upon what consideration  
 a Law of licence could be thus giv'n to a holy people  
 for the hardnesse of heart. I suppose all wil answer,  
 that for some good end or other. But here the contrary shall  
 be prov'd. First, that many ill effects, but no good end of  
 such a sufferance can be shewn; next, that a thing unlawful  
 10 can for no good end whatever be either don or allow'd by a  
 positive law. If there were any good end aim'd at, that end  
 was then good, either as to the Law, or to the lawgiver licencing;  
 or as to the person licenc't. That it could not be the end  
 of the Law, whether Moral or Judiciall to licence a sin, I  
 15 prove easily out of *Rom. 5. 20. The Law enter'd that the  
 offence might abound*, that is, that sin might be made abundantly  
 manifest to be hainous and displeasing to God, that so  
 his offer'd grace might be the more esteem'd. Now if the  
 Law in stead of aggravating and terrifying sin, shall give out  
 20 licence, it foils it selfe, and turns recreant from its own end:  
 it forestalls the pure grace of Christ which is through righteousness,  
 with impure indulgences which are through sin. And instead of  
 discovering sin, for *by the Law is the knowledge thereof* saith *S. Paul*,  
 and that by certain and true light  
 25 for men to walk in safely, it holds out fals and dazling fires  
 to stumble men: or like those miserable flies to run into with  
 delight, and be burnt: for how many soules might easily

think that to be lawfull, which the Law and Magistrate allow'd them? Again we read, 1 Tim. 1. 5. *The end of the Commandment is charity, out of a pure heart, and of a good conscience, and of faith unfained.* But never could that be charity  
 5 to allow a people what they could not use with a pure heart, but with conscience and faith both deceiv'd, or els despis'd. The more particular end of the Judicial Law is set forth to us clearly, Rom. 13. that God hath giv'n to that Law *a Sword not in vain, but to be a terror to evil works, a revenge to exe-*  
 10 *cute wrath upon him that doth evil.* If this terrible commission should but forbear to punish wickednes, were it other to be accounted then partial and unjust? but if it begin to write indulgence to vulgar uncleannes can it doe more to corrupt and shame the end of its own being? Lastly, if the Law allow sin,  
 15 it enters into a kind of covenant with sin, and if it doe, there is not a greater sinner in the world then the Law it selfe. The Law, to use an allegory something different from that in *Philo Judæus* concerning *Amaleck*, though haply more significant, the Law is the *Israelite*, and hath this absolute charge given  
 20 it Deut. 25. *To blot out the memory of sin the Amalekite from under heav'n, not to forget it.* Again, the Law is the *Israelite*, and hath this expresse repeated command *to make no cov'nant with sin the Canaanite*, but to expell him, lest he prove a snare. And to say truth it were too rigid and reason-  
 25 lesse to proclaime such an enmity between man and man, were it not the type of a greater enmity between law and sin. I spake ev'n now, as if sin were condemn'd in a perpetual *villenage* never to be free by law, never to be *manumitted*: but

sure sin can have no tenure by law at all but is rather an eternal outlaw, and in hostility with law past all attonement: both *diagonal contraries*, as much allowing one another, as day and night together in one hemisphere. Or if it be possible,  
 5 that sin with his darknes may come to composition, it cannot be without a foul eclipse, and twilight to the law, whose brightnesse ought to surpass the noon. Thus we see how this unclean permittance defeats the sacred and glorious end both of the Moral and Judicial Law.

10 As little good can the lawgiver propose to equity by such a lavish remisnes as this: if to remedy hardnes of heart, *Paræus* and other divines confesse, it more encreases by this liberty, then is lessn'd: and how is it probable that their hearts were more hard in this that it should be yeelded to, then in  
 15 any other crime? Their hearts were set upon usury, and are to this day, no Nation more; yet that which was the endamaging only of their estates, was narrowly forbid; this which is thought the extreme injury and dishonour of their Wives and daughters with the defilement also of themselves, is  
 20 bounteously allow'd. Their hearts were as hard under their best Kings to offer in high places, though to the true God; yet that but a small thing is strictly forwarn'd; this accounted a high offence against one of the greatest moral duties, is calmly permitted and establisht. How can it be evaded but  
 25 that the heavy censure of Christ should fall worse upon this lawgiver of theirs, then upon all the Scribes and Pharises? For they did but omit Judgement and Mercy to trifle in Mint and Cummin, yet all according to Law; but this their

Lawgiver altogether as punctuall in such niceties, goes marching on to adulteries, through the violence of divorce by Law against Law. If it were such a cursed act of *Pilat* a subordinate Judge to Cæsar, overswayd by those hard hearts with  
5 much a doe to suffer one transgression of Law but once, what is it then with lesse a doe to publish a Law of transgression for many ages? Did God for this come down and cover the Mount of *Sinai* with his glory, uttering in thunder those his sacred Ordinances out of the bottomlesse treasures of his wis-  
10 dome and infinit purenes to patch up an ulcerous and rott'n common-wealth with strict and stern injunctions, to wash the skin and garments for every unclean touch, and such easie permission giv'n to pollute the soule with adulteries by publick authority, without disgrace, or question? No, it had bin  
15 better that man had never known Law or matrimony, then that such foul iniquity should be fast'nd upon the holy One of *Israel*, the Judge of all the earth, and such a peece of folly as *Belzebub* would not commit, to divide against himself and pervert his own ends; or if he to compasse more certain mischief, might yeild perhaps to fain some good deed, yet that  
20 God should enact a licence of certain evill for uncertain good against His own glory and purenes, is abominable to conceive. And as it is destructive to the end of Law, and blasphemous to the honour of the lawgiver licencing, so is it as  
25 pernicious to the person licenc't. If a private friend admonish not, the Scripture saith *he hates his brother, and lets him perish*; but if he sooth him, and allow him in his faults, the Proverbs teach us *he spreads a net for his neighbours feet*,

*and worketh ruin.* If the Magistrate or Prince forget to administer due justice and restrain not sin, *Eli* himself could say *it made the Lords people to transgresse.* But if he count'nance them against law by his own example, what havock it  
 5 makes both in Religion and vertue among the people, may be guest by the anger it brought upon *Hophni* and *Phineas*, not to be appeas'd *with sacrifice nor offering for ever.* If the Law be silent to declare sin, the people must needs generally goe astray, for the Apostle himselfe saith, *he had not known lust*  
 10 *but by the Law:* and surely such a Nation seems not to be under the illuminating guidance of Gods law, but under the horrible doom rather of such as despise the Gospel, *he that is filthy let him be filthy still.* But where the Law it selfe gives a warrant for sin, I know not what condition of misery to  
 15 imagin miserable anough for such a people, unlesse that portion of the wicked, or rather of the damned, on whom God threatens in 11. Psalm, *to rain snares:* but that questionlesse cannot be by any Law, which the Apostle saith *is a ministry ordain'd of God unto our good,* and not so many waies and  
 20 in so high a degree to our destruction, as we have now bin graduating. And this is all the good can come to the person licenc't in his hardnesse of heart.

I am next to mention that which because it is a ground in divinity, Rom. 3. will save the labour of demonstrating, un-  
 25 lesse her giv'n axioms be more doubted then in other Arts; that a thing unlawfull can for no good whatsoever be done, much lesse allow'd by a positive law (although it be no lesse firm in the precepts of Philosophy.) And this is the matter

why Interpreters upon that passage in *Hosea* will not consent it to be a true story, that the Prophet took a Harlot to wife, because God being a pure Spirit could not command a thing repugnant to his own nature, no not for so good an end as to  
5 exhibit more to the life a wholsom and perhaps a converting parable to many an Israelite. Yet that he commanded the allowance of adulterous and injurious divorces for hardnes of heart, a reason obscure and in a wrong sense, they can very savourily perswade themselves; so tenacious is the leaven of an  
10 old conceit. But they shift it, he permitted only. Yet silence in the Law is consent, and consent is accessory; why then is not the Law being silent, or not active against a crime, accessory to its own conviction, it self judging? For though we should grant, that it approves not, yet it wills; and the Law-  
15 yers maxim is, that *the will compell'd is yet the will*. And though *Aristotle* in his *Ethicks* call this a *mixt action*, yet he concludes it to be voluntary and inexcusable, if it be evill. How justly then might human law and Philosophy rise up against the righteousnessse of *Moses*, if this be true which our  
20 vulgar Divinity fathers upon him, yea upon God himselfe; not silently and only negatively to permit, but in his law to divulge a written and generall priviledge to commit and persist in unlawfull divorces with a high hand, with security and no ill fame: for this is more then permitting or contriving,  
25 this is maintaining; this is warranting, this is protecting, yea this is doing evill, and such an evil as that reprobate lawgiver did, whose lasting infamy is ingrav'n upon him like a surname, *he who made Israel to sin*. This is the lowest pitch con-

trary to God that publick fraud and injustice can descend.

If it be affirm'd that God as being Lord may doe what he will; yet we must know that God hath not two wills, but one will, much lesse two contrary. If he once will'd adultery  
 5 should be sinfull, and to be punisht by death, all his omnipotence will not allow him to will the allowance that his holiest people might as it were by his own *Antinomie*, or counter-statute live unreprou'd in the same fact, as he himselfe esteem'd it, according to our common explainers. The hidden  
 10 wayes of his providence we adore & search not; but the law is his reveled wil, his complete, his evident, and certain will; herein he appears to us as it were in human shape, enters into cov'nant with us, swears to keep it, binds himself like a just lawgiver to his own prescriptions, gives himself to be under-  
 15 stood by men, judges and is judg'd, measures and is commensurat to right reason; cannot require lesse of us in one cantele of his Law then in another, his legall justice cannot be so fickle and so variable, sometimes like a devouring fire, and by and by connivent in the embers, or, if I may so say, oscitant  
 20 and supine. The vigor of his Law could no more remit, then the hallowed fire on his altar could be let goe out. The Lamps that burnt before him might need snuffing, but the light of his Law never. Of this also more beneath, in discussing a solution of *Rivet*us.

25 The Jesuits, and that sect among us which is nam'd of *Arminius*, are wont to charge us of making God the author of sinne in two degrees especially, not to speak of his permissions. 1. Because we hold that he hath decreed some to dam-

nation, and consequently to sinne, say they: Next, because those means which are of saving knowledge to others, he makes to them an occasion of greater sinne. Yet considering the perfection wherein man was created, and might have stood, no decree necessitating his free will, but subsequent though not in time yet in order to causes which were in his owne power, they might, methinks be perswaded to absolve both God and us. Whenas the doctrine of *Plato* and *Chrysippus* with their followers the *Academics* and the *Stoics*, who knew not what a consummat and most adorned *Pandora* was bestow'd upon *Adam* to be the nurse and guide of his arbitrary happinesse and perseverance, I mean his native innocence and perfection, which might have kept him from being our true *Epimetheus*, and though they taught of vertue and vice to be both the gift of *divine destiny*, they could yet find reasons not invalid, to justifie the counsels of God and Fate from the insulity of mortall tongues: That mans own freewill self-corrupted is the adequat and sufficient cause of his disobedience *besides Fate*; as *Homer* also wanted not to expresse both in his *Iliad* and *Odysssei*. And *Manilius* the Poet, although in his fourth book he tells of some created both to sinne and punishment; yet without murmuring and with an industrious cheerfulness he acquitts the *Deity*. They were not ignorant in their heathen lore, that it is most God-like to punish those who of his creatures became his enemies with the greatest punishment; and they could attain also to think that the greatest, when God himselfe throws a man furthest from him; which then they held hee did, when he



blinded, hard'n'd, and stirr'd up his offenders to finish, and pile up their desperat work since they had undertak'n it. To banish for ever into a locall hell, whether in the aire or in the center, or in that uttermost and bottomlesse gulph of *Chaos*,  
5 deeper from holy blisse then the worlds diameter multiply'd, they thought had not a punishing so proper and proportionat for God to inflict, as to punish sinne with sinne. Thus were the common sort of Gentiles wont to think, without any wry thoughts cast upon divine governance. And therefore *Cicero*  
10 not in his *Tusculan* or *Campanian* retirements among the learned wits of that age; but ev'n in the *Senat* to a mixt auditory (though he were sparing otherwise to broach his Philosophy among Statists and Lawyers) yet as to this point both in his oration against *Piso*, and in that which is about the  
15 answers of the Soothsayers against *Clodius*, he declares it publicly as no paradox to common ears, that God cannot punish man more, nor make him more miserable, then still by making him more sinnfull. Thus we see how in this controversie the justice of God stood upright ev'n among heathen  
20 disputers. But if any one be truly, and not pretendedly zealous for Gods honour, here I call him forth before men and Angels, to use his best and most advised skill, lest God more unavoidably then ever yet, and in the guiltiest manner be made the author of sin: if he shall not onely deliver over and  
25 incite his enemies by rebuks to sin as a punishment, but shall by patent under his own broad seal allow his friends whom he would sanctify and save, whom he would unite to himselfe and not dis-joyne, whom he would correct by wholesome

chastning, and not punish as hee doth the damned by lewd sinning, if he shall allow these in his Law the perfect rule of his own purest wil, and our most edify'd conscience, the perpetrating of an odious and manifold sin without the lest contesting. Tis wonder'd how there can be in God a secret, and a reveal'd will; and yet what wonder, if there be in man two answerable causes. But here there must be two revealed wills grappling in a fraternall warre with one another without any reasonable cause apprehended. This cannot be lesse then to  
10 ingraft sin into the substance of the law, which law is to provoke sin by crossing and forbidding, not by complying with it. Nay this is, which I tremble in uttering, to incarnat sin into the unpunishing, and well pleas'd will of God. To avoid these dreadfull consequences that tread upon the heels of  
15 those allowances to sin, will be a task of farre more difficulty then to appease those minds which perhaps out of a vigilant and wary conscience except against predestination. Thus finally we may conclude, that a Law wholly giving licence cannot upon any good consideration be giv'n to a holy people  
20 for hardnesse of heart in the vulgar sense.

---

CHAP. IV.

*That if divorce be no command, no more is mariage. That divorce could be no dispensation if it were sinfull. The Solution of Rivetus, that God dispenc't by some unknown way, ought not to satisfie a Christian mind.*

OTHERS think to evade the matter by not granting any Law of divorce, but onely a dispensation, which is contrary to the words of Christ, who him-  
 selfe calls it a *Law*, *Mark* 10. 5. or if we speak of a command  
 5 in the strictest definition, then mariage it selfe is no more a command then divorce, but onely a free permission to him who cannot contain. But as to dispensation I affirm, the same as before of the Law, that it can never be giv'n to the allowance of sin, God cannot give it neither in respect of himselfe,  
 10 nor in respect of man: not in respect of himselfe, being a most pure essence, the just avenger of sin; neither can he make that cease to be a sinne, which is in it selfe unjust and impure, as all divorces they say were which were not for adultery. Not in respect of man; for then it must be either to his good or to  
 15 his evill: Not to his good; for how can that be imagin'd any good to a sinner whom nothing but rebuke and due correction can save, to heare the determinate oracle of divine Law louder then any reproof dispensing and providing for the impunity and convenience of sin; to make that doubtfull, or  
 20 rather lawfull, which the end of the law was to make most evidently hatefull. Nor to the evill of man can a dispence be given; for if *the Law were ordaind unto life* *Ro.* 7. 10. how can the same God publish dispences against that Law, which must needs be unto death? Absurd and monstrous would that  
 25 dispence be, if any Judge or Law should give it a man to cut his own throat, or to damne himselfe. Dispence therefore presupposes full pardon, or els it is not a dispence, but a most baneful & bloody snare. And why should God enter covnant

with a people to be holy, as *the Command is holy, and just, and good*, Ro. 7. 12. and yet suffer an impure and treacherous dispenſe to mislead and betray them under the vizard of Law to a legitimate practice of uncleannesſe. God is no covenant breaker, he cannot doe this.

*Rivet*us, a diligent and learned Writer, having well waigh'd what hath been written by thoſe founders of diſpenſe, and finding the ſmall agreement among them, would fain work himſelfe aloof theſe rocks and quickſands, and thinks it beſt  
10 to conclude that God certainly did diſpenſe, but by ſome way to us unknown, and ſo to leave it. But to this I oppoſe, that a Chriſtian by no meanes ought reſt himſelfe in ſuch an ignorance; whereby ſo many abſurdities will ſtrait reflect both againſt the purity, juſtice, and wiſdome of God, the end alſo  
15 both of Law and Goſpel, and the compariſon of them both together. God indeed in ſome wayes of his providence, is high and ſecret paſt finding out: but in the delivery and execution of his Law, eſpecially in the managing of a duty ſo daily and ſo familiar as this is wherof we reaſon, hath plain  
20 enough reveal'd himſelf, and requires the obſervance thereof not otherwiſe then to the law of nature and of equity imprinted in us ſeems correlative. And hee hath taught us to love and to extoll his Lawes, not onely as they are his, but as they are juſt and good to every wiſe and ſober underſtand-  
25 ing. Therefore *Abraham* ev'n to the face of God himſelfe, ſeem'd to doubt of divine juſtice, if it ſhould ſwerve from that irradiation wherewith it had enlight'n'd the mind of man, and bound it ſelfe to obſerve its own rule. *Wilt thou*

*destroy the righteous with the wicked? That be far from thee; shall not the Judge of the earth doe right? Therby declaring that God hath created a righteousness in right it selfe, against which he cannot doe. So David, Psal. 119. The*  
5 *testimonies which thou hast commanded are righteous and very faithfull; thy word is very pure, therefore thy servant loveth it.* Not onely then for the authours sake, but for its owne purity. *He is faithfull, saith S. Paul, he cannot deny himselfe,* that is, cannot deny his own promises, cannot but  
10 *be true to his own rules.* He often pleads with men the uprightnessesse of his ways by their own principles. How should we imitate him els to *be perfect as he is perfect.* If at pleasure hee can dispencc with golden Poetick ages of such pleasing licence, as in the fabl'd reign of old *Saturn.* And this perhaps  
15 before the Law might have some covert; but under such an undispencing covenant as *Moses* made with them, and not to tell us why and wherfore indulgence, cannot give quiet to the brest of any intelligent man. We must be resolv'd how the law can be pure and perspicuous, and yet throw a polluted  
20 skirt over these *Eleusinian* mysteries, that no man can utter what they mean: worse in this then the worst obscenities of heathen superstition; for their filthines was hid, but the mystick reason therof known to their Sages: But this Jewish imputed filthinesse was daily and open, but the reason of it is  
25 not known to our Divines. We know of no designe the Gospel can have to impose new righteousness upon works, but to remit the old by faith without works, if we mean justifying works: we know no mystery our Saviour could have to lay

new bonds upon mariage in the covenant of grace which himselfe had loosn'd to the severity of law. So that *Rivet*us may pardon us if we cannot bee contented with his non-solution to remain in such a peck of incertainties and doubts  
5 so dangerous and gastly to the fundamentals of our faith.

---

## CHAP. V.

*What a Dispensation is.*

**T**HEREFORE to get some better satisfaction, we must proceed to enquire as diligently as we can, what a dispensation is, which I find to be either properly so call'd, or improperly. Improperly so call'd, [it] is  
10 rather a particular and exceptive law absolving and disobliging from a more general command for some just and reasonable cause. As *Numb.* 9. they who were unclean, or in a journey, had leave to keep the passover, in the second  
15 moneth, but otherwise ever in the first. As for that in *Leviticus* of marrying the brothers wife, it was a penall statute rather then a dispence; and commands nothing injurious or in it selfe unclean, onely preferres a speciall reason of charitie, before an institutive decencie, and perhaps is meant for life  
20 time onely, as is exprest beneath in the prohibition of taking two sisters. What other edict of *Moses*, carrying but the semblance of a Law in any other kind, may beare the name of a dispence, I have not readily to instance. But a dispensation most properly, is some particular accident rarely happ'ning  
25 and therefore not specify'd in the Law, but left to the de-

cision of charity, ev'n under the bondage of Jewish rites, much more under the liberty of the Gospel. Thus did *David enter into the house of God, and did eat the Shew bread, he and his followers, which was ceremonially unlawfull*. Of  
5 such dispenses as these it was that *Verdune* the French Divine so gravely disputed in the Councell of *Trent* against Friar *Adrian*, who held that the Pope might dispencc with any thing. *It is a fond perswasion, saith Verdune, that dispensing is a favour, nay it is as good distributive justice, as what is*  
10 *most, and the Priest sins if he give it not: for it is nothing else but a right interpretation of law*. Thus farre that I can learn touching this matter wholsomly decreed. But that God who is the giver of every good and perfect gift, *James* 1. should give out a rule and directory to sin by, should enact a dispen-  
15 sation as long liv'd as a law wherby to live in priviledg'd adultery for hardnes of heart, and yet this obdurat disease cannot bee conceiv'd how it was the more amended by this unclean remedy, is the most deadly and Scorpion like gift that the enemy of mankind could have given to any miser-  
20 able sinner, and is rather such a dispencc as that was which the serpent gave to our first parents. God gave Quails in his wrath, and Kings in his wrath, yet neither of these things evill in themselves, but that hee whose eyes cannot behold impurity, should in the book of his holy covnant, his most  
25 unpassionat law, give licence, and statute for uncontroul'd adultery, although it goe for the receiv'd opinion, I shall ever disswade my soul from such a creed, such an indulgence as the shop of Antichrist never forg'd a baser.

## CHAP. VI.

*That the Jew had no more right to this supposed dispence,  
then the Christian hath, and rather not so much.*

**B**UT if we must needs dispence, let us for a while so farre dispence with truth, as to grant that sinne may  
5 be dispenc't: yet there will be copious reason found to prove that the Jew had no more right to such a suppos'd indulgence, then the Christian, whether we look at the clear knowledge wherein he liv'd, or the strict performance of  
10 works wherto he was bound. Besides visions and prophesies they had the Law of God, which in the Psalmes and Proverbs is chiefly prais'd for surenesse and certainty both easie and perfect to the enlightning of the simple. How could it be so  
15 obscure then, or they so sottishly blind in this plain morall and houshold duty? They had the same precepts about marriage, Christ added nothing to their clearnesse, for that had  
argu'd them imperfect; hee opens not the Law, but removes the Pharisaick mists rais'd between the law and the peoples eyes: the onely sentence which he addes, *What God hath joyn'd let no man put asunder*, is as obscure as any clause  
20 fetcht out of *Genesis*, and hath encreast a yet undecided controversie of *Clandestine* mariages. If we examine over all his sayings, we shall find him not so much interpreting the Law with his words, as referring his owne words to be interpreted by the Law, and oftner obscures his mind in short, and vehement, and compact sentences, to blind and puzzle them the  
25 more who would not understand the Law. The Jewes ther-



fore were as little to be dispenc't with for lack of morall knowledge, as we.

Next, none I think will deny, but that they were as much bound to perform the Law as any Christian. That severe and rigorous knife not sparing the tender fore-skin of any male  
5 infant, to carve upon his flesh the mark of that strict and pure covnant wherinto he enter'd, might give us to understand anough against the fancie of dispensing. *S. Paul* testifies that every *circumcis'd man is a debtor to the whole law*,  
10 Gal. 5. or els *circumcision is in vain*, Rom. 2. 25. How vain then and how preposterous must it needs be to exact a circumcision of the Flesh from an infant unto an outward signe of purity, and to dispencc an uncircumcision in the soul of a grown man to an inward and reall impurity? How vain  
15 again was that law to impose tedious expiations for every slight sinne of ignorance and error, and to priviledge without penance or disturbance an odious crime whether of ignorance or obstinacie? How unjust also inflicting death & extirpation for the mark of circumstantial purenes omitted, and pro-  
20 claiming all honest and liberall indemnity to the act of a substantiall impurenesse committed, making void the covnant that was made against it. Thus if we consider the tenor of the Law, to be circumcis'd and to perform all, not pardoning so much as the scapes of error and ignorance, and compare  
25 this with the condition of the Gospel, beleeve and be baptiz'd; I suppose it cannot bee long ere we grant that the Jew was bound as strictly to the performance of every duty as was

possible, and therefore could not be dispenc't with more then the Christian, perhaps not so much.

---

## CHAP. VII.

*That the Gospel is apter to dispence then the Law: Paræus answer'd.*

5 **I**F then the Law wil afford no reason why the Jew should be more gently dealt with then the Christian, then surely the Gospel can afford as little why the Christian should be lesse gently dealt with then the Jew. The Gospell indeed exhorts to highest perfection but beares with  
 10 weakest infirmity more then the Law. Hence those indulgencies, *All cannot receive this saying. Every man hath his proper gift*, with expresse charges not to *lay on yokes which our fathers could not beare*. The nature of man still is as weak and yet as hard, and that weaknesse and hardnesse as  
 15 unfit and as unteachable to bee harshly us'd as ever. I but saith *Paræus*, there is a greater portion of Spirit powr'd upon the Gospel, which requires from us perfecter obedience. I answer, This does not prove that the law therfore might give allowance to sinne more then the Gospel; and if it were no  
 20 sin, wee know it the work of the Spirit to *mortifie our corrupt desires and evill concupiscence*; but not to root up our naturall affections and disaffections moving to and fro ev'n in wisest men upon just and necessary reasons which were the true ground of that *Mosaick* dispence, and is the utmost ex-

tent of our pleading. What is more or lesse perfect we dispute not, but what is sinne or no sinne; and in that I still affirm the Law requir'd as perfect obedience as the Gospell: besides that the prime end of the Gospel is not so much to exact our obedience, as to reveal grace and the satisfaction of our disobedience. What is now exacted from us, it is the accusing Law that does it ev'n yet under the Gospell; but cannot bee more extreme to us now, then to the Jewes of old: for the Law ever was of works, and the Gospell ever was of grace.

10     Either then the Law by harmlesse and needfull dispences which the Gospel is now made to deny, must have anticipated and exceeded the grace of the Gospel, or els must be found to have giv'n politick and superficial graces without real pardon, saying in general doe this and live, and yet deceiving and  
15     damning under hand, with unsound and hollow permissions, which is utterly abhorring from the end of all Law, as hath bin shewd. But if those indulgences were safe and sinles out of tendernes and compassion, as indeed they were, and yet shall be abrogated by the Gospel, then the Law, whose end  
20     is by rigor to magnifie grace, shall it self give grace, and pluck a faire plume from the Gospel, instead of hastning us thither, alluring us from it. And wheras the terror of the Law was as a servant to amplifie and illustrat the mildnesse of grace; now the unmildnesse of Evangelick grace shall turn  
25     servant to declare the grace and mildnesse of the rigorous Law. The Law was harsh to extoll the grace of the Gospel, and now the Gospel by a new affected strictnes of her own, shall extenuate the grace, which her self offers. For by exact-

ing a duty which the Law dispenc't, if we perform it, then is grace diminisht, by how much performance advances, unlesse the Apostle argue wrong: if we perform it not, and perish for not performing, then are the conditions of grace  
5 harder then those of rigor. If through Faith and Repentance we perish not, yet grace still remains the lesse, by requiring that which rigor did not require, or at least not so strictly. Thus much therfore to *Paræus*, that if the Gospel require perfect obedience then the Law as a duty, it exalts the Law and  
10 debases it self, which is dishonourable to the work of our Redemption. Seeing therfore that all the causes of any allowance that the Jews might have, remain as well to the Christians, this is a certain rule, that so long as the causes remain the allowance ought. And having thus at length enquir'd the  
15 truth concerning Law and dispence, their ends, their uses, their limits, and in what manner both Jew and Christian stands liable to the one, or capable of the other, we may safely conclude, that to affirm the giving of any law, or law-like dispence to sin for hardnesse of heart, is a doctrine of that  
20 extravagance from the sage principles of piety, that who so considers thoroughly, cannot but admire how this hath been digested all this while.

## CHAP. VIII.

*The true sence how Moses suffer'd divorce for hardnesse of heart.*

WHAT may we do then to salve this seeming inconsistency? I must not dissemble that I am confident it can be don no other way then this.

*Moses* Deut. 24. 1. establisht a grave and prudent Law,  
 5 full of moral equity, full of due consideration towards nature, that cannot be resisted; a Law consenting with the Laws of wisest men and civilest Nations. That when a man hath married a wife, if it come to passe he cannot love her by reason of some displeasing natural quality or unfitness in her,  
 10 let him write her a bill of divorce. The intent of which law undoubtedly was this, that if any good and peaceable man should discover some helples disagreement or dislike either of mind or body, wherby he could not cheerfully perform the duty of a husband without the perpetual dissembling of of-  
 15 fence and disturbance to his spirit, rather then to live uncomfortably and unhappily both to himself and to his wife, rather then to continue undertaking a duty which he could not possibly discharge, he might dismissee her whom he could not tolerably and so not conscionably retain. And this law the  
 20 Spirit of God by the mouth of *Salomon*, Pro. 30. 21. 23. testifies to be a good and a necessary Law; by granting it that a *hated woman* (for so the hebrew word signifies, rather then odious though it come all to one) *that a hated woman when she is married, is a thing that the earth cannot beare*. What  
 25 follows then but that the charitable Law must remedy what nature cannot undergoe. Now that many licentious and hard hearted men took hold of this Law to cloak their bad purposes, is nothing strange to beleve. And these were they, not

for whom *Moses* made the Law, God forbid, but whose hard-  
 nes of heart taking ill advantage by this Law he held it better  
 to suffer as by accident, where it could not be detected, rather  
 then good men should loose their just and lawfull priviledge  
 5 of remedy: Christ therfore having to answer these tempting  
 Pharises, according as his custom was, not meaning to inform  
 their proud ignorance what *Moses* did in the true intent of  
 the Law, which they had ill cited, suppressing the true cause  
 for which *Moses* gave it, and extending it to every slight  
 10 matter, tells them their own, what *Moses* was forc't to suffer  
 by their abuse of his Law. Which is yet more plain if we mark  
 that our Saviour in the fifth of *Matth.* cites not the Law of  
*Moses*, but the Pharisaical tradition falsly grounded upon  
 that law. And in those other places, Chap. 19. and *Mark* 10.  
 15 the Pharises cite the Law, but conceale the wise and human  
 reason there exprest; which our Saviour corrects not in them,  
 whose pride deserv'd not his instruction, only returns them  
 what is proper to them; *Moses for the hardnesse of your heart*  
*suffer'd you*, that is, such as you *to put away your wives*; and  
 20 *to you he wrote this precept* for that cause, which (*to you*)  
 must be read with an impression, and understood limitedly  
 of such as cover'd ill purposes under that Law: for it was sea-  
 sonable that they should hear their own unbounded licence  
 rebukt, but not seasonable for them to hear a good mans  
 25 requisit liberty explain'd. But us he hath taught better, if we  
 have eares to hear. He himselfe acknowledg'd it to be a Law,  
*Mark* 10. and being a law of God, it must have an undoubted  
*end of charity, which may be us'd with a pure heart, a good*

*conscience, and faith unfained*, as was heard: it cannot allow sin, but is purposely to resist sin, as by the same chapter to *Timothy* appears. There we learn also *that the Law is good, if a man use it lawfully*. Out of doubt then there must be a  
 5 certain good in this Law which *Moses* willingly allow'd; and there might be an unlawfull use made therof by hypocrits; and that was it which *Moses* unwillingly suffer'd; fore seeing it in general, but not able to discern it in particulars. Christ therefore mentions not here what *Moses* and the Law in-  
 10 tended: for good men might know that by many other rules: and the scornfull Pharises were not fit to be told, untill they could imploy that knowledge they had, lesse abusively. Only he acquaints them with what *Moses* by them was put to suffer.

## CHAP. IX.

15 *The words of the Institution how to be understood; and of our Saviours answer to his Disciples.*

AND to entertain a little their overweening arrogance as best befitted, and to amaze them yet further, because they thought it no hard matter to fulfill  
 20 the Law, he draws them up to that unseparable institution which God ordain'd in the beginning before the fall, when man and woman were both perfect, and could have no cause to separate: just as in the same Chap. he stands not to contend with the arrogant young man who boasted his observance of

the whole Law, whether he had indeed kept it or not, but skruet him up higher, to a task of that perfection, which no man is bound to imitate. And in like manner that pattern of the first institution he set before the opinionative Pharises to  
5 dazle them and not to bind us. For this is a solid rule, that every command giv'n with a reason, binds our obedience no otherwise then that reason holds. Of this sort was that command in *Eden*; *Therefore shall a man cleave to his wife, and they shall be one flesh*: which we see is no absolute command,  
10 but with an inference, *Therefore*: the reason then must be first consider'd, that our obedience be not mis-obedience. The first is, for it is not single, because the wife is to the husband *flesh of his flesh*, as in the verse going before. But this reason cannot be sufficient of it self; for why then should he for his wife  
15 leave his father and mother, with whom he is farre *more flesh of flesh and bone of bone*, as being made of their substance. And besides it can be but a sorry and ignoble society of life, whose unseparable injunction depends meerly upon flesh and bones. Therefore we must look higher, since Christ himself  
20 recalls us to the beginning, and we shall finde that the primitive reason of never divorcing, was that sacred and not vain promise of God to remedy mans lonelines by *making him a meet help for him*, though not now in perfection, as at first, yet still in proportion as things now are. And this is repeated  
25 vers. 20. when all other creatures were fitly associated and brought to *Adam* as if the divine power had bin in some care and deep thought, because *there was not yet found a help meet for man*. And can we so slightly deprese the all-wise



purpose of a deliberating God, as if his consultation had produc't no other good for man but to joyn him with an accidentall companion of propagation, which his sudden word had already made for every beast? nay a farre lesse good to  
5 man it will be found, if she must at all adventures be fastn'd upon him individually. And therefore even plain sense and equity, and, which is above them both, the all-interpreting voice of Charity her self cries loud that this primitive reason, this consulted promise of God *to make a meet help*, is the  
10 onely cause that gives authority to this command of not divorcing, to be a command. And it might be further added, that if the true definition of a wife were askt in good earnest, this clause of being *a meet help* would shew it self so necessary, and so essential in that demonstrative argument, that it  
15 might be logically concluded: therefore she who naturally and perpetually is no meet help, can be no wife; which cleerly takes away the difficulty of dismissing such a one. If this be not thought enough I answer yet further, that mariage, unlesse it mean a fit and tolerable mariage, is not inseparable  
20 neither by nature nor institution. Not by nature for then those Mosaick divorces had bin against nature, if separable and inseparable be contraries, as who doubts they be: and what is against nature is against Law, if soundest Philosophy abuse us not: by this reckning *Moses* should bee most un-  
25 mosaick, that is, most illegal, not to say most unnaturall. Nor is it inseparable by the first institution: for then no second institution in the same Law for so many causes could dissolve it: it being most unworthy a human (as *Plato's* judgement

is in the fourth book of his Lawes) much more a divine Law-giver to write two several decrees upon the same thing. But what would *Plato* have deem'd if the one of these were good, the other evill to be done? Lastly, suppose it bee inseparable  
5 by institution, yet in competition with higher things as religion and charity in mainest matters, and when the chiefe end is frustrat for which it was ordain'd, as hath been shown, if still it must remain inseparable, it holds a strange and lawlesse propriety from all other works of God (or under  
10 heaven.) From these many considerations we may safely gather, that so much of the first institution as our Saviour mentions, for he mentions not all, was but to quell and put to non-plus the tempting Pharises; and to lay open their ignorance and shallow understanding of the Scriptures. For,  
15 saith he, *have ye not read that he which made them at the beginning, made them male and female, and said, for this cause shall a man cleave to his wife?* which these blind usurpers of *Moses* chair could not gainsay: as if this single respect of male and female were sufficient against a thousand incon-  
20 veniences and mischiefes, to clogge a rationall creature to his endlesse sorrow unrelinquishably, under the guilefull superscription of his intended solace and comfort. What if they had thus answer'd, Master, if thou mean to make wedlock as inseparable as it was from the begining, let it be made also a  
25 fit society, as God meant it, which we shall soon understand it ought to be, if thou recite the whole reason of the law. Doubtlesse our Saviour had applauded their just answer. For then they had expounded this command of Paradise, even as

*Moses* himself expounds it by his lawes of divorce, that is, with due and wise regard had to the premises and reasons of the first command, according to which, without unclean and temporizing permissions he instructs us in this imperfect  
5 state what we may lawfully doe about divorce.

But if it be thought that the Disciples offended at the rigour of Christs answer, could yet obtain no mitigation of the former sentence pronounc't to the Pharises, it may be fully answer'd, that our Saviour continues the same reply to  
10 his Disciples, as men leaven'd with the same customary licence, which the Pharises maintain'd, and displeas'd at the removing of a traditionall abuse wherto they had so long not unwillingly bin us'd: it was no time then to contend with their slow and prejudicial belief, in a thing wherein an ordi-  
15 nary measure of light in Scripture, with some attention might afterwards informe them well enough. And yet ere Christ had finisht this argument, they might have pickt out of his own concluding words, an answer more to their minds, and in effect the same with that which hath been all this while  
20 entreating audience. *All men, saith he, cannot receive this saying, save they to whom it is given, he that is able to receive it let him receive it.* What saying is this which is left to a mans choice to receive or not receive? What but the married life. Was our Saviour then so mild and favourable to the  
25 weaknesse of a single man, and is he turn'd on the sudden so rigorous and inexorable to the distresses and extremities of an ill wedded man? Did hee so graciously give leave to change the better single life for the worse married life? Did he open so

to us this hazardous and accidentall doore of mariage to shut upon us like the gate of death without retracting or returning, without permitting to change the worst, most insupportable, most unchristian mischance of mariage for all the mischiefs  
5 and sorrowes that can ensue, being an ordinance which was especially giv'n as a cordiall and exhilarating cup of solace the better to beare our other crosses and afflictions? Questionlesse this were a hardheartednesse of undivorcing worse then that in the Jewes which they say extorted the allowance from  
10 *Moses*, and is utterly dissonant from all the doctrine of our Saviour. After these considerations therfore to take a law out of Paradise giv'n in time of originall perfection, and to take it barely without those just and equall inferences and reasons which mainly establish it, nor so much as admitting those  
15 needfull and safe allowances wherwith *Moses* himselfe interprets it to the faln condition of man, argues nothing in us but rashnesse and contempt of those meanes that God left us in his pure and chast Law, without which it will not be possible for us to perform the strict imposition of this command: or if we strive  
20 beyond our strength, we shall strive to obay it otherwise then God commands it. And lamented experience daily teaches the bitter and vain fruits of this our presumption, forcing men in a thing wherin we are not able to judge either of their strength, or of their sufferance. Whom neither one vice nor  
25 other by natural addiction, but onely marriage ruins, which doubtlesse is not the fault of that ordinance, for God gave it as a blessing, nor alwayes of mans mis-choosing; it being an error above wisdom to prevent, as examples of wisest men so

mistaken manifest: it is the fault therfore of a perverse opinion that will have it continu'd in despite of nature and reason, when indeed it was never truly joyn'd. All those expositers upon the fifth of *Matthew* confesse the Law of *Moses* to be  
 5 the Law of the Lord, wherin no addition or diminution hath place; yet comming to the point of divorce, as if they fear'd not to be call'd least in the kingdom of heav'n, any slight evasion will content them to reconcile those contradictions which they make between Christ and *Moses*, between Christ  
 10 and Christ.

---

## CHAP. X.

*The vain shift of those who make the law of divorce to be onely the premises of a succeeding law.*

**S**OME will have it no Law, but the granted premises of another Law following, contrary to the words of  
 15 Christ, *Mark* 10. 5. and all other translations of gravest authority, who render it in form of a Law; agreeable to *Malach.* 2. 16. as it is most anciently and modernly expounded. Besides the bill of divorce, and the particular occasion therein mention'd, declares it to be orderly and legall.  
 20 And what avails this to make the matter more righteous, if such an adulterous condition shal be mention'd to build a law upon without either punishment, or so much as forbidding; they pretend it is implicitly reprov'd in these words, *Deut.* 24. 4. *after she is defil'd*; but who sees not that this defile-

ment is onely in respect of returning to her former husband after an intermixt mariage; els why was not the defiling condition first forbidd'n, which would have sav'd the labour of this after law; nor is it seemly or piously attributed to the justice of God and his known hatred of sinne, that such a hainous fault as this through all the Law, should be onely wip't with an implicit and oblique touch (which yet is falsly suppos'd) and that his peculiar people should be let wallow in adulterous mariages almost two thousand yeares for want of a direct Law to prohibit them; 'tis rather to be confidently assum'd that this was granted to apparent necessities, as being of unquestionable right and reason in the Law of nature, in that it stil passes without inhibition, ev'n when greatest cause is giv'n us to expect it should be directly forbidd'n.

## CHAP. XI.

15 *The other shift of saying divorce was permitted by Law, but not approv'd. More of the Institution.*

BUT it was not approv'd. So much the worse that it was allow'd, as if sin had over-masterd the law of God, to conform her steddy and strait rule to sins crookednesse, which is impossible. Besides, what needed a positive grant of that which was not approv'd? it restrain'd no liberty to him that could but use a little fraud, it had bin better silenc't, unlesse it were approv'd in some case or other. But still it was not approv'd. Miserable excusers! He who

doth evil that good may come thereby, approves not what he doth, and yet the grand rule forbids him, and counts *his damnation* just if hee doe it. The Sorceresse *Medea* did not approve her owne evill doings, yet lookt not to be excus'd for  
5 that; and it is the constant opinion of *Plato* in *Protagoras* and other of his dialogues agreeing with that proverbiall sentence among the *Greeks*, that no *man is wicked willingly*; which also the *Peripateticks* doe rather distinguish then deny. What great thank then if any man reputed wise and constant, will  
10 neither doe nor permit others under his charge to doe that which hee approves not, especially in matter of sinne. But for a Judge, but for a Magistrate the Shepheard of his people to surrender up his approbation against law & his own judgment to the obstinacie of his heard, what more un-Judge-like,  
15 more un-Magistrate-like, and in warre more un-commander-like? Twice in a short time it was the undoing of the Roman State, first when *Pompey*, next when *Marcus Brutus* had not magnanimity enough but to make so poore a resignation of what they approv'd, to what the boisterous Tribunes and  
20 Souldiers bawl'd for. Twice it was the saving of two the greatest Common-wealths in the world, of *Athens* by *Themistocles* at the Sea fight of *Salamis*; of *Rome* by *Fabius Maximus* in the *Punick* warre, for that these two matchlesse Generalls had the fortitude at home against the rashnes and the  
25 clamours of their own Captains and confederates to withstand the doing or permitting of what they could not approve in the duty of their great command. Thus farre of civill prudence. But when we speak of sinne, let us look againe upon

the old reverend *Eli* who in his heavie punishment found no difference between the doing and permitting of what he did not approve. If hardnesse of heart in the people may be any excuse, why then is *Pilat* branded through all memory? Hee  
5 approv'd not what he did, he openly protested, he washt his hands and laboured not a little, ere he would yeeld to the hard hearts of a whole people, both Princes and plebeians importuning and tumulting unto the fear of a revolt. Yet is there any will undertake his cause? If therefore *Pilat* for suffering but  
10 one act of cruelty against law, though with much unwillingnesse testify'd, at the violent demand of a whole Nation, shall stand so black upon record to all posterity? Alas for *Moses*! what shall we say for him, while we are taught to beleeeve he suffer'd not one act onely both of cruelty and uncleannesse in  
15 one divorce, but made it a plain and lasting law against law whereby ten thousand acts accounted both cruell and unclean, might be daily committed, and this without the least suit or petition of the people that wee can read of.

And can we conceive without vile thoughts, that the maj-  
20 esty and holines of God could endure so many ages to gratifie a stubborn people in the practise of a foul polluting sin, and could he expect they should abstain, he not signifying his mind in a plain command, at such time especially when he was framing their laws and them to all possible perfection?  
25 But they were to look back to the first institution, nay rather why was not that individual institution brought out of Paradise, as was that of the Sabbath, and repeated in the body of the Law, that men might have understood it to be a com-



mand? for that any sentence that bears the resemblance of a precept, set there so out of place in another world at such a distance from the whole Law, and not once mention'd there, should be an obliging command to us, is very disputable, and  
 5 perhaps it might be deny'd to be a command without further dispute: however, it commands not absolutely, as hath bin clear'd, but only with reference to that precedent promise of God, which is the very ground of his institution; if that appeare not in some tolerable sort, how can we affirm such a  
 10 matrimony to be the same which God instituted! In such an accident it will best behove our sobernes to follow rather what moral *Sinai* prescribes equal to our strength, then fondly to think within our strength all that lost Paradise relates.

---

## CHAP. XII.

*The third shift of them who esteem it a meer judicial Law.*  
 15 *Prov'd again to be a Law of moral equity.*

**A**NOTHER while it shall suffice them, that it was not a moral but a judicial Law, and so was abrogated. Nay rather not abrogated, because judicial: which Law the ministry of Christ came not to deal with.  
 20 And who put it in mans power to exempt, where Christ speaks in general of not abrogating *the least jot or tittle*, and in special not that of divorce, because it follows among those Laws, which he promis'd expresly not to abrogate, but to vindicate from abusive traditions: which is most evidently to

be seen in the 16. of *Luke*, where this caution of not abrogating is inserted immediatly, and not otherwise then purposely, when no other point of the Law is toucht, but that of divorce. And if we mark the 31. vers. of *Mat.* the 5. he there  
5 cites not the Law of *Moses*, but the licencious Glosse which traduc't the Law; that therfore which he cited, that he abrogated, and not only abrogated but disallow'd and flatly condemn'd, which could not be the Law of *Moses*; for that had bin foulely to the rebuke of his great servant. To abrogate a Law  
10 made with Gods allowance, had bin to tell us only that such a Law was now to cease, but to refute it with an ignominious note of civilizing adultery, casts the reproof, which was meant only to the Pharises ev'n upon him who made the Law. But yet if that be judicial which belongs to a civil Court, this  
15 Law is lesse judicial then nine of the ten Commandements; for antiquaries affirm that divorces proceeded among the Jews without knowledge of the Magistrate, only with hands and seales under the testimony of some Rabbies to be then present. *Perkins* in a *Treatise of Conscience* grants, that what in  
20 the judicial Law is of common equity, binds also the Christian. And how to judge of this prescribes 2. wayes. If wise Nations have enacted the like decree. Or if it maintain the good of family, Church or Common-wealth. This therfore is a pure moral *economical* Law, too hastily imputed of tolerating sin; being rather so clear in nature and reason, that  
25 it was left to a mans own arbitrement to be determin'd between God and his own conscience; not only among the Jews, but in every wise Nation; the restraint wherof who is

not too thick sighted, may see how hurtfull and distractive it is to the house, the Church and Common-wealth. And that power which Christ never took from the master of family, but rectify'd only to a right and wary use at home; that  
 5 power the undiscerning Canonist hath improperly usurpt into his Court-lect, and describbl'd with a thousand trifling impertinencies, which yet have fill'd the life of man with serious trouble and calamity. Yet grant it were of old a judicial Law, it need not be the lesse moral for that, being conver-  
 10 sant, as it is, about vertue or vice. And our Saviour disputes not heer the judicature, for that was not his office, but the morality of divorce, whether it be adultery or no; if therfore he touch the law of *Moses* at all, he touches the moral part therof; which is absurd to imagine that the cov'nant of grace  
 15 should reform the exact and perfect law of works, eternal and immutable; or if he touch not the Law at all, then is not the allowance therof disallow'd to us.

## CHAP. XIII.

*The ridiculous opinion, that divorce was permitted from the custom in Ægypt. That Moses gave not this Law unwill-*  
 20 *ingly. Perkins confesses this Law was not abrogated.*

**O**THERS are so ridiculous as to allege that this licence of divorcing was giv'n them because they were so accustom'd in Egypt. As if an ill custom were to be kept to all posterity; for the dispensation is

both universal and of time unlimited, and so indeed no dispensation at all; for the over-dated dispensation of a thing unlawfull, serves for nothing but to encrease hardnes of heart, and makes men but wax more incorrigible, which were a  
5 great reproach to be said of any Law or allowance that God should give us. In these opinions it would be more Religion to advise well, lest we make our selves juster then God, by censuring rashly that for sin which his unspotted Law without rebuke allows, and his people without being conscious of  
10 displeasing him have us'd. And if we can think so of Moses, as that the Jewish obstinacy could compell him to write such impure permissions against the rule of God and his own judgement, doubtles it was his part to have protested publickly what straits he was driv'n to, and to have declar'd his  
15 conscience when he gave any Law against his mind; for the Law is the touch-stone of sin and of conscience, must not be intermixt with corrupt indulgences; for then it looses the greatest praise it has, of being certain and infallible, not leading into error, as all the Jews were led by this connivence  
20 of Moses if it were a connivence. But still they fly back to the primitive institution, and would have us re-enter Paradise against the sword that guards it. Whom I again thus reply to, that the place in Genesis contains the description of a fit and perfect mariage, with an interdict of ever divorcing such  
25 a union; but where nature is discover'd to have never joyn'd indeed, but vehemently seeks to part, it cannot be there conceiv'd that God forbids it; nay he commands it both in the Law and in the Prophet *Malachy*, which is to be our rule.

And *Perkins* upon this chap. of *Matth.* deals plainly, that our Saviour heer confutes not *Moses* Law, but the false glosses that deprav'd the Law; which being true, *Perkins* must needs grant, that something then is left to that law which Christ  
5 found no fault with; and what can that be but the conscionable use of such liberty as the plain words import? So that by his owne inference, Christ did not absolutely intend to restrain all divorces to the onely cause of adultery. This therefore is the true scope of our Saviours will, that he who looks  
10 upon the law concerning divorce, should look also back upon the first institution, that he may endeavour what is perfectest: and he that looks upon the institution should not refuse as sinfull and unlawfull those allowances which God affords him in his following Law, lest he make himselfe purer then  
15 his maker; and presuming above strength, slip into temptations irrecoverably. For this is wonderfull, that in all those decrees concerning mariage, God should never once mention the prime institution to dissuade them from divorcing; and that he should forbid smaller sinnes as opposite to the hard-  
20 nesse of their hearts, and let this adulterous matter of divorce passe ever unprov'd.

This is also to bee marvell'd, that seeing Christ did not condemn whatever it was that *Moses* suffer'd, and that thereupon the Christian Magistrate permits usury and open stews, and  
25 here with us adultery to bee so slightly punisht, which was punisht by death to these hard hearted Jewes, why wee should strain thus at the matter of divorce, which may stand so much with charity to permit, and make no scruple to allow

usury esteem'd to be so much against charity. But this it is to embroile our selves against the righteous and all-wise Judgements and Statutes of God; which are not variable and contrarious, as we would make them, one while permitting  
5 and another while forbidding, but are most constant and most harmonious each to other. For how can the uncorrupt and majestick Law of God, bearing in her hand the wages of life and death, harbour such a repugnance within herselfe, as to require an unexempted and impartiall obedience to all her  
10 decrees, either from us or from our Mediator, and yet debase her selfe to faulter so many ages with circumcis'd adulteries, by unclean and slubbering permissions.

---

## CHAP. XIV.

*That Beza's opinion of regulating sinne by Apostolick law, cannot be sound.*

15 **Y**ET Beza's opinion is that a politick Law, but what politick Law I know not, unlesse one of *Matchia-vel's*, may regulate sin; may bear indeed, I grant, with imperfection for a time, as those Canons of the Apostles did in ceremoniall things: but as for sinne, the essence of it  
20 cannot consist with rule; and if the law fall to regulate sinne, and not to take it utterly away, it necessarily confirms and establishes sinne. To make a regularity of sinne by law, either the law must straiten sinne into no sinne, or sinne must crook the law into no law. The Judiciall law can serve to no other  
25 end then to bee the protector and champion of Religion and

honest civility, as is set down plainly, *Rom.* 13. and is but the arm of morall law, which can no more be separate from justice then justice from vertue: their office also in a different manner steers the same cours; the one teaches what is good  
5 by precept, the other unteaches what is bad by punishment. But if we give way to politick dispensations of lewd uncleanness, the first good consequence of such a relaxe will bee the justifying of Papal stews, joyn'd with a toleration of epidemick whordom. Justice must revolt from the end of her  
10 authority, and become the patron of that wherof she was created the punisher. The example of usury which is commonly alleg'd, makes against the allegation which it brings, as I touch'd before. Besides that usury, so much as is permitted by the Magistrate, and demanded with common equity, is  
15 neither against the word of God, nor the rule of charity, as hath been often discus't by men of eminent learning and judgement. There must be therefore some other example found out to shew us wherein civill policy may with warrant from God settle wickednes by law, and make that lawfull  
20 which is lawlesse. Although I doubt not but upon deeper consideration, that which is true in Physick, wil be found as true in policie: that as of bad pulses those that beat most in order, are much worse then those that keep the most inordinat circuit, so of popular vices those that may bee committed legally, will be more pernicious then those that are  
25 left to their own cours at perill, not under a stinted priviledge to sin orderly and regularly, which is an implicit contradiction, but under due and fearlesse execution of punishment.

The political law, since it cannot regulate vice, is to restrain it, by using all means to root it out: but if it suffer the weed to grow up to any pleasurable or contented height upon what pretext soever, it fastens the root, it prunes and dresses  
5 vice, as if it were a good plant. Let no man doubt therefore to affirm that it is not so hurtfull or dishonourable to a Common wealth, nor so much to the hardning of hearts, when those worse faults pretended to be fear'd are committed, by who so dares under strict and executed penalty, as when those  
10 lesse faults tolerated for fear of greater harden their faces, not their hearts only, under the protection of publick authority. For what lesse indignity were this, then as if Justice her self the Queen of vertues, descending from her scepter'd royalty, instead of conquering, should compound and treat with sin  
15 her eternal adversary and rebel, upon ignoble terms. Or as if the judicial Law were like that untrusty steward in the Gospel, and instead of calling in the debts of his moral master, should give out subtle and sly acquittances to keep him self from begging. Or let us person him like some wretched  
20 itinerary Judge, who to gratifie his delinquents before him, would let them basely break his head, lest they should pull him from the bench, and throw him over the barre. Unlesse we had rather think both moral and judicial full of malice and deadly purpose conspir'd to let the debtor Israelite the  
25 seed of *Abraham* run on upon a banckrout score, flatter'd with insufficient and insnaring discharges, that so he might be hal'd to a more cruel forfeit for all the indulgent arrears which those judicial acquitments had ingaged him in. No



no, this cannot be, that the Law whose integrity and faithfulness is next to God, should be either the shamelesse broker of our impunities, or the intended instrument of our destruction. The method of holy correction such as became the  
 5 Common wealth of *Israel*, is not to bribe sin with sin, to capitulate and hire out one crime with another: but with more noble and gracefull severity then *Popilius* the *Roman legat* us'd with *Antiocus*, to limit and level out the direct way from vice to vertu, with straitest and exactest lines on either side,  
 10 not winding, or indenting so much as to the right hand of fair pretences. Violence indeed and insurrection may force the Law to suffer what it cannot mend: but to write a decree in allowance of sin, as soon can the hand of Justice rot off. Let this be ever concluded as a truth that will outlive the faith  
 15 of those that seek to bear it down.

## CHAP. XV.

*That divorce was not giv'n for wives only, as Beza and Paræus write. More of the Institution.*

20 **L**ASTLY, if divorce were granted, as *Beza* and others say, not for men, but to release afflicted wives; certainly it is not only a dispensation, but a most mercifull Law: and why it should not yet be in force, being wholly as needfull, I know not what can be in cause but senselesse cruelty. But yet to say, divorce was granted for relief of wives, rather then of husbands, is but weakly conjectur'd,

and is manifest the extreme shift of a huddl'd exposition. Whenas it could not be found how hardnesse of heart should be lessn'd by liberty of divorce, a fancy was devis'd to hide the flaw by commenting that divorce was permitted only for the  
5 help of wives. Palpably uxorious! Who can be ignorant that woman was created for man, and not man for woman; and that a husband may be injur'd as insufferably in mariage as a wife. What an injury is it after wedlock not to be belov'd, what to be slighted, what to be contended with in point of house-  
10 rule who shall be the head, not for any parity of wisdome, for that were something reasonable, but out of a female pride. *I suffer not* saith S. Paul, *the woman to usurp authority over the man.* If the Apostle could not suffer it, into what mould is he mortify'd that can? *Salomon saith that a bad wife is to*  
15 *her husband, as rott'nnesse to his bones, a continual dropping: better dwell in a corner of the house top or in the wildernesses then with such a one. Who so hideth her hideth the wind, and one of the four mischiefs that the earth cannot bear.* If the Spirit of God wrote such aggravations as these,  
20 and as may be guest by these similitudes, counsels the man rather to divorce then to live with such a colleague, and yet on the other side expresses nothing of the wives suffering with a bad husband; is it not most likely that God in his Law had more pittie towards man thus wedlockt, then towards the  
25 woman that was created for another. The same Spirit relates to us the cours which the *Medes* and *Persians* took by occasion of *Vashti*, whose meer denial to come at her husbands sending lost her the being Queen any longer, and set up a

wholsom Law, *that every man should beare rule in his own house*. And the divine relater shews us not the least signe of disliking what was done; how should he? if *Moses* long before was nothing lesse mindfull of the honour and preeminence due to man. So that to say divorce was granted for woman rather then man, was but fondly invented. Esteeming therfore to have asserted thus an injur'd law of *Moses* from the unwarranted and guilty name of a dispensation, to be again a most equall and requisite law, we have the word  
10 of Christ himself, that he came not to alter the least tittle of it; and signifies no small displeasure against him that shall teach to do so. On which relying, I shall not much waver to affirm, that those words which are made to intimate, as if they forbad all divorce but for adultery (though *Moses* have  
15 constituted otherwise) those words tak'n circumscriptly, without regard to any precedent law of *Moses* or attestation of Christ himself, or without care to preserve those his fundamental and superior laws of nature and charity, to which all other ordinances give up their seals, are as much against  
20 plain equity, and the mercy of religion, as those words of *Take, eat, this is my body*, elementally understood, are against nature and sense.

And surely the restoring of this degraded law, hath well recompenc't the diligence was us'd, by enlightning us further  
25 to find out wherfore Christ took off the Pharises from alleging the law, and referr'd them to the first institution, not condemning, altering, or abolishing this precept of divorce, which is plainly moral, for that were against his truth, his

promise, and his prophetick office; but knowing how fallaciously they had cited, and conceal'd the particular and natural reason of the Law, that they might justify any froward reason of their own, he lets goe that sophistry unconvinc't,  
5 for that had bin to teach them else, which his purpose was not. And since they had tak'n a liberty which the law gave not, he amuses and repells their tempting pride with a perfection of Paradise, which the law requir'd not; not therby to oblige our performance to that wherto the law never en-  
10 joyn'd the fal'n estate of man; for if the first institution must make wedlock, what ever happen, inseparable to us, it must make it also as perfect, as meetly helpfull, and as comfortable, as God promis'd it should be, at least in some degree; otherwise it is not equal or proportionable to the strength of  
15 man, that he should be reduc't into such indissoluble bonds to his assured misery, if all the other conditions of that covenant be manifestly alter'd.

---

## CHAP. XVI.

*How to be understood that they must be one flesh: and how that those whom God hath joyn'd man should not sunder.*

20 **N**EXT he saith, *they must be one flesh*, which, when all conjecturing is don, will be found to import no more but to make legitimate and good the carnal act, which els might seem to have something of pollution in it: And inferrs thus much over, that the fit union of their souls

be such as may even incorporate them to love and amity; but that can never be where no correspondence is of the minde; nay instead of being one flesh, they will be rather two car-kasses chain'd unnaturally together; or as it may happ'n, a  
5 living soule bound to a dead corps, a punishment too like that inflicted by the tyrant *Mezentius*; so little worthy to be receiv'd as that remedy of lonelinesse which God meant us. Since we know it is not the joyning of another body will remove lonelinesse, but the uniting of another compliable mind; and that  
10 it is no blessing but a torment, nay a base and brutish condition to be one flesh, unlesse where nature can in some measure fix a unity of disposition. The meaning therefore of these words, *For this cause shall a man leave his father and his mother and shall cleave to his wife*, was first to shew us the  
15 deer affection which naturally grows in every not unnatural mariage, ev'n to the leaving of parents, or other familiarity whatsoever: next, it justifies a man in so doing, that nothing is done undutifully to father or mother. But he that should be here sternly commanded to cleave to his error, a disposition which to his he finds will never ciment a quotidian of  
20 sorrow and discontent in his house, let us be excus'd to pause a little and bethink us every way round ere wee lay such a flat solecisme upon the gracious, and certainly not inexorable, not rushlesse and flinty ordinance of marriage. For if the mean-  
25 ing of these words must be thus blockt up within their owne letters from all equity and fair deduction, they will serve then well indeed their turn, who affirme divorce to have been granted onely for wives; whenas we see no word of this text

bindes women, but men onely, what it binds. No marvell then if *Salomith* sister to *Herod*, sent a writ of ease to *Costobarus* her husband; which, as *Josephus* there attests, was lawfull onely to men. No marvell though *Placidia* the sister of  
 5 *Honorius* threat'n'd the like to Earle *Constantius*, for a trivial cause as *Photius* relates from *Olympiodorus*. No marvell any thing if letters must be turn'd into palisadoes to stake out all requisite sense from entring to their due enlargement.

Lastly, Christ himselfe tells who should not bee put asunder, namely, those whom God hath joyn'd. A plain solution  
 10 of this great controversie, if men would but use their eyes; for when is it that God may bee said to joyn, when the parties and their friends consent? No surely, for that may concur to lewdest ends. Or is it when Church rites are finisht?  
 15 Neither; for the efficacie of those depends upon the presupposed fitnessse of either party. Perhaps, after carnall knowledge? Least of all; for that may joyn persons whom neither law nor nature dares joyn: tis left, that only then, when the minds are fitly dispos'd, and enabl'd to maintain a cheerfull  
 20 conversation, to the solace and love of each other, according as God intended and promis'd in the very first foundation of matrimony, *I will make him a help meet for him*; for surely what God intended and promis'd, that onely can be thought to bee his joyning, and not the contrary. So likewise the  
 25 Apostle witnesseth, 1 *Cor.* 7. 15. that in mariage *God hath call'd us to peace*. And doubtlesse in what respect hee hath call'd us to mariage, in that also hee hath joyn'd us. The rest whom either disproportion or deadnesse of spirit, or some-

thing distastfull and averse in the immutable bent of nature renders unconjugall, error may have joyn'd, but God never joyn'd against the meaning of his own ordinance. And if he joynd them not, then is there no power above their own consent to hinder them from unjoyning, when they cannot reap the sobrest ends of being together in any tolerable sort. Neither can it be said properly that such twain were ever divorc't, but onely parted from each other, as two persons unconjunctive and unmariable together. But if, whom God hath made a fit help, frowardnesse or private injuries hath made unfit, that being the secret of mariage God can better judge then man, neither is man indeed fit or able to decide this matter; however it be, undoubtedly a peacefull divorce is a lesse evill, and lesse in scandall then a hatefull hardhearted and destructive continuance of mariage in the judgement of Moses and of Christ, that justifies him in choosing the lesse evill, which if it were an honest and civill prudence in the law, what is there in the Gospell forbidding such a kind of legall wisdom, though wee should admit the common Expositors.

## CHAP. XVII.

*The sentence of Christ concerning divorce how to be expounded. What Grotius hath observ'd. Other additions.*

HAVING thus unfolded those ambiguous reasons, wherewith Christ, as his wont was, gave to the Pharises that came to sound him, such an answer as they deserv'd, it will not be uneasie to explain the

sentence it selfe that now follows; *Whosoever shall put away his wife, except it be for fornication, and shall marry another, committeth adultery.* First therfore I will set down what is observ'd by *Grotius* upon this point, a man of generall learning. Next I produce what mine own thoughts gave me, before I had seen his annotations. *Origen*, saith he, notes that Christ nam'd adultery rather as one example of other like cases, then as one only exception. And that it is frequent, not only in human but in divine Laws, to expresse one kind of fact, wherby other causes of like nature may have the like plea: as *Exod.* 21. 18, 19, 20, 26. *Deut.* 19. 5. And from the maxims of civil Law he shews that ev'n in sharpest penal laws, the same reason hath the same right: and in gentler Lawes, that from like causes to like the Law interprets rightly. But it may be objected, saith hee, that nothing destroyes the end of wedlock so much as adultery. To which he answers, that mariage was not ordaind only for copulation, but for mutuall help and comfort of life; and if we mark diligently the nature of our Saviours commands, wee shall finde that both their beginning and their end consists in charity: whose will is that wee should so be good to others, as that wee bee not cruell to our selves. And hence it appeares why *Marke*, and *Luke*, and *S. Paul* to the *Cor.* mentioning this precept of Christ, adde no exception: because exceptions that arise from naturall equity, are included silently under generall terms: it would bee consider'd therfore whether the same equity may not have place in other cases lesse frequent. Thus farre he. From hence, is what I adde: first, that this saying of Christ, as it is usually ex-



pounded, can be no law at all, that a man for no cause should separate but for adultery, except it bee a supernaturall law, not binding us as we now are: had it bin the law of nature, either the Jews, or some other wise and civill nation would have  
5 pres't it: or let it be so; yet that law *Deut.* 24. 1. whereby a man hath leave to part, when as for just and naturall cause discover'd he cannot love, is a law ancients, and deeper ingrav'n in blameles nature then the other: therefore the inspired Law-giver Moses took care that this should be speci-  
10 fy'd and allow'd: the other he let vanish in silence, not once repeated in the volume of his law, ev'n as the reason of it vanisht with Paradise. Secondly, this can be no new command, for the Gospel enjoyns no new morality, save only the infinit enlargement of charity, which in this respect is call'd the *new*  
15 *commandement* by *S. John*; as being the accomplishment of every command. Thirdly, It is no command of perfection further then it partakes of charity, which is *the bond of perfection*. Those commands therefore which compell us to self cruelty above our strength, so hardly will help forward to  
20 perfection, that they hinder and set backward in all the common rudiments of Christianity, as was prov'd. It being thus clear, that the words of Christ can be no kind of command, as they are vulgarly tak'n, we shall now see in what sence they may be a command, and that an excellent one, the same  
25 with that of *Moses*, and no other. Moses had granted that only for a natural annoyance, defect, or dislike, whether in body or mind (for so the Hebrew words plainly note) which a man could not force himselfe to live with, he might give a

bill of divorce, thereby forbidding any other cause wherein amendment or reconciliation might have place. This Law the Pharises depraving, extended to any slight contentious cause whatsoever. Christ therefore seeing where they halted, urges  
5 the negative part of that law, which is necessarily understood (for the determinate permission of *Moses* binds them from further licence) and checking their supercilious drift, declares that no accidental, temporary, or reconcileable offence, except fornication, can justify a divorce: he touches not here  
10 those natural and perpetual hindrances of society, whether in body or mind, which are not to be remov'd: for such, as they are aptest to cause an unchangeable offence, so are they not capable of reconciliation because not of amendment; they do not break indeed, but they annihilate the bands of marriage more than adultery. For that fault committed argues not  
15 alwaies a hatred either natural or incidental against whom it is committed; neither does it inferre a disability of all future helpfulnes, or loyalty, or loving agreement, being once past, and pardon'd, where it can be pardon'd: but that which naturally distasts and *findes no favour in the eyes* of matrimony,  
20 can never be conceal'd, never appeas'd, never intermitted, but proves a perpetuall nullity of love and contentment, a solitude, and dead vacation of all acceptable conversing. *Moses* therefore permits divorce, but in cases only that have no hands  
25 to joyn, and more need separating then adultery. Christ forbids it, but in matters only that may accord, and those lesse then fornication. Thus is *Moses* Law here plainly confirm'd, and those causes which he permitted, not a jot gainsaid. And

that this is the true meaning of this place I prove also by no lesse an Author then *S. Paul* himself, 1 *Cor.* 7. 10, 11. upon which text Interpreters agree that the Apostle only repeats the precept of Christ: where while he speaks of *the wives*  
5 *reconcilement to her husband*, he puts it out of controversie, that our Saviour meant chiefly matters of strife and reconcilement; of which sort he would not that any difference should be the occasion of divorce, except fornication. And that we may learn better how to value a grave and prudent law of  
10 *Moses*, and how unadvisedly we smatter with our lips, when we talk of Christs abolishing any Judiciall law of his great Father, except in some circumstances which are Judaicall rather then Judicial, and need no abolishing but cease of themselves, I say again, that this recited law of *Moses* contains  
15 a cause of divorce greater beyond compare then that for adultery; and whoso cannot so conceive it, errs and wrongs exceedingly a law of deep wisdom for want of well fadoming. For let him mark no man urges the just divorcing of adultery, as it is a sin, but as it is an injury to mariage; and  
20 though it be but once committed, and that without malice, whether through importunity or opportunity, the Gospel does not therfore dissuade him who would therfore divorce; but that natural hatred whenever it arises, is a greater evil in mariage, then the accident of adultery, a greater defrauding,  
25 a greater injustice, and yet not blameable, he who understands not after all this representing, I doubt his will like a hard spleen draws faster then his understanding can well sanguifie. Nor did that man ever know or feel what it is to

love truly, nor ever yet comprehend in his thoughts what the true intent of marriage is. And this also will be somewhat above his reach, but yet no lesse a truth for lack of his perspective, that as no man apprehends what vice is, so well as  
 5 he who is truly vertuous, no man knows hel like him who converses most in heav'n, so there is none that can estimate the evil and the affliction of a naturall hatred in matrimony, unlesse he have a soul gentle enough, and spacious enough to contemplate what is true love.

10 And the reason why men so disesteem this wise judging Law of God, and count hate, or *the not finding of favour*, as it is there term'd, a humorous, a dishonest, and slight cause of divorce, is because themselves apprehend so little of what true concord means: for if they did, they would be juster in  
 15 their ballancing between natural hatred and casuall adultery; this being but a transient injury, and soon amended, I mean as to the party against whom the trespass is: but that other being an unspeakable and unremitting sorrow and offence, wherof no amends can be made, no cure, no ceasing but by  
 20 divorce, which like a divine touch in one moment heals all; and like the word of God, in one instant hushes outrageous tempests into a sudden stilnesse and peacefull calm. Yet all this so great a good of Gods own enlarging to us, is by the hard rains of them that fit us wholly diverted and imbezzl'd  
 25 from us. Maligners of mankind! But who hath taught you to mangle thus, and make more gashes in the miseries of a blamelesse creature, with the leaden daggers of your literall decrees, to whose ease you cannot adde the tithe of one small

atome, but by letting alone your unhelpfull Surgery. As for  
 such as think wandring concupiscence to bee here newly and  
 more precisely forbidd'n, then it was before, if the Apostle  
 can convince them; we know that we are to *know lust by the*  
 5 *law*, and not by any new discovery of the Gospel. The Law  
 of *Moses* knew what it permitted, and the Gospel knew what  
 it forbid; hee that under a peevisish conceit of debarring con-  
 cupiscence, shall goe about to make a novice of *Moses*, (not  
 to say a worse thing for reverence sake) and such a one of  
 10 God himselfe, as is a horror to think, to bind our Saviour in  
 the default of a down-right promise breaking, and to bind the  
 disunions of complaining nature in chains together, and curb  
 them with a canon bit, tis he that commits all the whordom  
 and adultery, which himselfe adjudges, besides the former  
 15 guilt so manifold that lies upon him. And if none of these con-  
 siderations with all their wait and gravity, can avail to the dis-  
 possessing him of his pretious literalism, let some one or other  
 entreat him but to read on in the same 19. of *Math.* till he  
 come to that place that sayes *Some make themselves Eunuchs*  
 20 *for the kingdom of heavns sake*. And if then he please to  
 make use of *Origens* knife, he may doe well to be his own  
 carver.

## CHAP. XVIII.

*Whether the words of our Saviour be rightly expounded only  
 of actual fornication to be the cause of divorce. The opin-*  
 25 *ion of Grotius with other reasons.*

**B**UT because we know that Christ never gave a Judicial Law, and that the word *fornication* is variously significant in Scripture, it will be much right done to our Saviours words, to consider diligently, whether  
5 it be meant heer, that nothing but actuall fornication, prov'd by witnes, can warrant a divorce, for so our cannon law judges. Neverthelesse as I find that *Grotius* on this place hath observ'd, the Christian Emperours, *Theodosius* the second, and *Justinian*, men of high wisdom and reputed piety,  
10 decreed it to bee a divorsive fornication, if the wife attempted either against the knowledge, or obstinately against the will of her husband, such things as gave open suspicion of adulterizing: as the wilfull haunting of feasts, and invitations with men not of her neer kindred, the lying forth of her  
15 house without probable cause, the frequenting of Theaters against her husbands mind, her endeavour to prevent or destroy conception. Hence that of *Jerom*, *Where fornication is suspected, the wife may lawfully be divorc't*; not that every motion of a jealous mind should be regarded, but that it  
20 should not be exacted to prove all things by the visibility of Law witnessing, or els to hood-wink the mind: for the law is not able to judge of these things but by the rule of equity, and by permitting a wise man to walk the middle way of prudent circumspection, neither wretchedly jealous, nor stupidly and tamely patient. To this purpose hath *Grotius* in his  
25 notes. He shews also that fornication is tak'n in Scripture for such a continual headstrong behaviour, as tends to plain contempt of the husband: and proves it out of *Judges* 19. 2.

where the Levites wife is said to have plaid the whoor against him; which *Josephus* and the *Septuagint*, with the *Chaldean*, interpret onely of stubbornesse and rebellion against her husband: and to this I adde that *Kimchi* and the two other Rabbies who glosse the text, are in the same opinion. *Ben Gerson* reasons, that had it bin whoordom, a Jew and a Levit would have disdain'd to fetch her again. And this I shall contribute, that had it been whoordom, she would have chosen any other place to run to, then to her fathers house, it being  
10 so infamous for an Hebrew woman to play the harlot, and so opprobrious to the parents. Fornication then in this place of the *Judges* is understood for stubborn disobedience against the husband, and not for adultery. A sin of that sudden activity as to be already committed, when no more is done, but  
15 onely lookt unchastly: which yet I should bee loath to judge worthy a divorce, though in our Saviours language it bee call'd adultery. Neverthelesse when palpable and frequent signes are giv'n, the law of God, *Numb.* 5. so far gave way to the jealousie of a man as that the woman set before the  
20 Sanctuary with her head uncover'd, was adjur'd by the Priest to swear whether she were false or no; and constrain'd to drink that *bitter water* with an undoubted *curse of rottenesse and tympany* to follow, unlesse she were innocent. And the jealous man had not bin guiltles before God, as seems by  
25 the last verse, if having such a suspection in his head, he should neglect this triall; which if to this day it be not to be us'd, or be thought as uncertain of effect, as our antiquated law of *Ordalium*, yet all equity will judge that many adulterous

demeanors which are of lewd suspicion and example, may be held sufficient to incur a divorce, though the act it self hath not been prov'd. And seeing the generosity of our Nation is so, as to account no reproach more abominable, then to bee  
5 nicknam'd the husband of an adultresse, that our law should not be as ample as the Law of God to vindicate a man from that ignoble sufferance, is our barbarous unskilfulnesse, not considering that the law should be exasperated according to our estimation of the injury. And if it must be suffer'd till the  
10 act be visibly prov'd, *Salomon* himselfe whose judgement will be granted to surpasse the acutenesse of any Canonist, confesses, *Pro.* 30 . 19. 20. that for the act of adultery, it is as difficult to be found as the *track of an Eagle in the aire, or the way of a ship in the Sea*: so that a man may be put to un-  
15 manly indignities, ere it be found out. This therfore may bee enough to inform us, that divorsive adultery is not limited by our Saviour to the utmost act, and that to be attested alwayes by eye witnesse, but may bee extended also to divers obvious actions, which either plainly lead to adultery, or give such  
20 presumption, wherby sensible men may suspect the deed to bee already don. And this the rather may bee thought, in that our Saviour chose to use the word *Fornication*, which word is found to signifie other matrimoniall transgressions of main breach to that covnant besides actuall adultery. For that sinne  
25 needed not the riddance of divorce, but of death by the Law, which was active ev'n till then by the examples of the woman tak'n in adultery; or if the law had been dormant, our Saviour was more likely to have told them of their neglect, then



to have let a capitall crime silently scape into a divorce: or if it bee said his businesse was not to tell them what was criminall in the civill Courts, but what was sinfull at the barre of conscience, how dare they then having no other ground then  
 5 these our Saviours words, draw that into triall of law, which both by *Moses* and our Saviour was left to the jurisdiction of conscience? But wee take from our Saviour, say they, only that it was adultery and our Law of it selfe applies the punishment. But by their leave that so argue, the great Law-giver  
 10 of all the world who knew best what was adultery both to the Jew and to the Gentile appointed no such applying, and never likes when mortall men will be vainly presuming to out-strip his justice.

---

## CHAP. XIX.

*Christs manner of teaching. S. Paul addes to this matter of*  
 15 *divorce without command, to shew the matter to be of equity, not of rigor. That the bondage of a Christian may be as much, and his peace as little in some other mariages besides idolatrous: If those arguments therfore be good in that one case, why not in those other: therfore the Apostle*  
 20 *himselfe addes, ἐν τοῖς τοιοῦτοις.*

**T**HUS at length wee see both by this and by other places, that there is scarce any one saying in the Gospel, but must bee read with limitations and distinctions, to bee rightly understood; for Christ gives no full com-

ments or continued discourses, but as *Demetrius* the Rhetoritian phrases it, speaks oft in Monosyllables, like a maister, scattering the heavenly grain of his doctrine like pearl heer and there, which requires a skilfull and laborious gatherer, 5 who must compare the words he findes, with other precepts, with the end of every ordinance, and with the generall *analogie* of Evangelick doctrine: otherwise many particular sayings would bee but strange repugnant riddles; and the Church would offend in granting divorce for frigidity, which is not 10 here excepted with adultery, but by them added. And this was it undoubtedly which gave reason to *S. Paul* of his own authority, as hee professes, and without command from the Lord, to enlarge the seeming construction of those places in the Gospell; by adding a case wherin a person deserted, which 15 is something lesse then divorc't, may lawfully marry again. And having declar'd his opinion in one case, he leaves a further liberty for Christian prudence to determine in cases of like importance; using words so plain as are not to be shifted off, *that a brother or a sister is not under bondage in such* 20 *cases*, adding also, that *God hath call'd us to peace* in marriage.

Now if it be plain that a Christian may be brought into unworthy *bondage*, and his religious *peace* not onely interrupted now and then, but perpetually and finally hinder'd in wed- 25 lock by mis-yoking with a diversity of nature as well as of religion, the reasons of *S. Paul* cannot be made speciall to that one case of infidelity, but are of equal moment to a divorce, wherever Christian liberty and peace are without fault equally

obstructed. That the ordinance which God gave to our comfort, may not be pinn'd upon us to our undeserved thralldom; to be coopt up as it were in mockery of wedlock, to a perpetual betrothed lonelines and discontent, if nothing worse  
 5 ensue. There being nought els of marriage left between such, but a displeasing and forc't remedy against the sting of a bruit desire: which fleshly accustoming without the souls union and commixture of intellectuall delight, as it is rather a soiling then a fulfilling of mariage-rites, so is it enough to im-  
 10 base the mettle of a generous spirit, and sinks him to a low and vulgar pitch of endeavour in all his actions, or, which is wors, leavs him in a despairing plight of abject & hardn'd thoughts: which condition rather then a good man should fal into, a man usefull in the service of God and mankind, Christ  
 15 himself hath taught us to dispence with the most sacred ordinance of his worship, even for a bodily healing to dispence with that holy and speculative rest of Sabbath, much more then with the erroneous observance of an ill-knotted mariage, for the sustaining of an overcharg'd faith and perseverance.

---

## CHAP. XX.

20 *The meaning of S. Paul, that Charity beleeveth all things. What is to be said to the licence which is vainly fear'd will grow hereby. What to those who never have don prescribing patience in this case. The Papist most severe against divorce: yet most easie to all licence. Of all the miseries in*  
 25 *mariage God is to be clear'd, and the fault to be laid on mans unjust laws.*

AND though bad causes would take licence by this pretext, if that cannot be remedied, upon their conscience be it, who shall so doe. This was that hardness of heart, and abuse of a good law which *Moses* was content  
5 to suffer, rather then good men should not have it at all to use needfully. And he who to run after one lost sheep, left ninety nine of his own flock at random in the wildernes, would little perplex his thought for the obduring of nine hunder'd and ninety such as will daily take worse liberties, whether  
10 they have permission or not. To conclude, as without charity God hath giv'n no commandment to men, so without it, neither can men rightly beleeve any commandment giv'n. For every act of true faith, as well that wherby we beleve the law, as that wherby wee endeavour the law, is wrought in us  
15 by charity, according to that in the divine hymne of St. *Paul*, 1 *Cor.* 13. *Charity beleeveth all things*: not as if she were so credulous, which is the exposition hitherto current, for that were a trivial praise; but to teach us that charity is the high governess of our beleefe, and that we cannot safely assent to  
20 any precept writt'n in the Bible, but as charity commends it to us. Which agrees with that of the same Apostle to the *Ephes.* 4. 14. 15. where he tells us that the way to get a sure undoubted knowledge of things, is to hold that for truth, which accords most with charity. Whose unerring guidance  
25 and conduct having follow'd as a load-starre with all diligence and fidelity in this question, I trust, through the help of that illuminating Spirit which hath favour'd me, to have done no every dayes work: in asserting after many ages the

words of Christ with other Scriptures of great concernment from burdensom & remorseles obscurity, tangl'd with manifold repugnances, to their native lustre and consent between each other: hereby also dissolving tedious and *Gordian* difficulties, which have hitherto molested the Church of God, and are now decided, not with the sword of *Alexander*, but with the immaculate hands of charity, to the unspeakable good of Christendome. And let the extreme literalist sit down now and revolve whether this in all necessity be not the due  
10 result of our Saviours words: or if he persist to be otherwise opinion'd, let him well advise, lest thinking to gripe fast the Gospel, he be found in stead with the canon law in his fist: whose boisterous edicts tyrannizing the blessed ordinance of marriage into the quality of a most unnatural and unchristianly yoke, have giv'n the flesh this advantage to hate it, and  
15 turn aside, oft times unwillingly, to all dissolute uncleannesse, even till punishment it self is weary, and overcome by the incredible frequency of trading lust, and uncontroull'd adulteries. Yet men whose Creed is custom, I doubt not but wil  
20 be still endeavouring to hide the sloth of their own timorous capacities with this pretext, that for all this tis better to endure with patience and silence this affliction which God hath sent. And I agree tis true; if this be exhorted and not enjoyn'd; but withall it will be wisely don to be as sure as may  
25 be, that what mans iniquity hath laid on, be not imputed to Gods sending, least under the colour of an affected patience we detain our selves at the gulphs mouth of many hideous temptations, not to be withstood without proper gifts, which,

as *Perkins* well notes, God gives not ordinarily, no not to most earnest prayers. Therefore we pray, *Lead us not into temptation*, a vain prayer, if having led our selves thither, we love to stay in that perilous condition. God sends remedies,  
5 as well as evils; under which he who lies and groans, that may lawfully acquit himselfe, is accessory to his own ruin: nor will it excuse him, though he suffer through a sluggish fearfulness to search thoroughly what is lawfull, for feare of disquieting the secure falsity of an old opinion. Who doubts  
10 not but that it may be piously said, to him who would dismiss frigidity, bear your trial, take it, as if God would have you live this life of continence: if he exhort this, I hear him as an Angel, though he speak without warrant: but if he would compell me, I know him for Satan. To him who divorces an  
15 adulteresse, Piety might say; Pardon her; you may shew much mercy, you may win a soul: yet the law both of God and man leaves it freely to him. For God loves not to plow out the heart of our endeavours with over-hard and sad tasks. God delights not to make a drudge of vertue, whose actions  
20 must be al elective & unconstrain'd. Forc't *vertue* is as a *bolt* overshot, it goes neither forward nor backward, and does no good as it stands. Seeing therefore that neither Scripture nor reason hath laid this unjust austerity upon divorce, we may resolve that nothing else hath wrought it, but that letter-  
25 bound servility of the Canon Doctors, supposing mariage to be a Sacrament, and out of the art they have to lay unnecessary burdens upon all men, to make a fair shew in the fleshly observance of matrimony, though peace and love with all

other conjugall respects fare never so ill. And indeed the Papists who are the strictest forbidders of divorce, are the easiest libertines to admit of grossest uncleannesse; as if they had a designe by making wedlock a supportlesse yoke, to  
5 violate it most, under colour of preserving it most inviolable: and withall delighting, as their mystery is, to make men the day-labourers of their own afflictions, as if there were such a scarcity of miseries from abroad, that we should be made to melt our choycest home blessings, and coin them into crosses,  
10 for want wherby to hold commerce with patience. If any therfore who shall hap to read this discourse, hath been through misadventure ill ingag'd in this contracted evill here complain'd of, and finds the fits and workings of a high impatience frequently upon him, of all those wild words which  
15 men in misery think to ease themselves by uttering, let him not op'n his lips against the providence of heav'n, or tax the wayes of God and his divine truth: for they are equal, easie, and not burdensome; nor doe they ever crosse the just and reasonable desires of men, nor involve this our portion of  
20 mortall life, into a necessity of sadnesse and malecontent, by laws commanding over the unreducible *antipathies* of nature sooner or later found: but allow us to remedy and shake off those evils into which human error hath led us through the midst of our best intentions; and to support our incident ex-  
25 tremities by that authentick precept of soveran charity; whose grand commission is to doe and to dispose over all the ordinances of God to man; that love & truth may advance each other to everlasting. While we literally superstitious through

customary faintnesse of heart, not venturing to pierce with our free thoughts into the full latitude of nature and religion, abandon our selves to serve under the tyranny of usurpt opinions, suffering those ordinances which were allotted to our  
 5 solace and reviving, to trample over us and hale us into a multitude of sorrowes which God never meant us. And where he set us in a fair allowance of way, with honest liberty and prudence to our guard, we never leave subtilizing and casuisting till we have straitn'd and par'd that liberal path into a razors  
 10 edge to walk on, between a precipice of unnecessary mischief on either side: and starting at every false Alarum, we doe not know which way to set a foot forward with manly confidence and Christian resolution, through the confused ringing in our eares of *panick* scruples and amazements.

CHAP. XXI.

15 *That the matter of divorce is not to be try'd by law, but by conscience, as many other sins are. The Magistrate can only see that the condition of divorce be just and equall. The opinion of Fagius, and the reasons of this assertion.*

20 **A**NOTHER act of papall encroachment it was, to pluck the power and arbitrement of divorce from the master of family, into whose hands God and the law of all Nations had put it, and Christ so left it, preaching onely to the conscience, and not authorizing a judicall Court to tosse about and divulge the unaccountable and secret rea-



sons of disaffection between man and wife, as a thing most improperly answerable to any such kind of triall. But the Popes of *Rome* perceiving the great revenue and high authority it would give them ev'n over Princes, to have the  
5 judging and deciding of such a main consequence in the life of man as was divorce, wrought so upon the superstition of those ages, as to divest them of that right which God from the beginning had entrusted to the husband: by which meanes they subjected that ancient and naturally domestick  
10 prerogative to an externall and unbefitting Judicature. For although differences in divorce about Dowries, Jointures, and the like, besides the punishing of adultery, ought not to passe without referring, if need be, to the Magistrate; yet that the absolute and final hindring of divorce cannot belong to any  
15 civil or earthly power, against the will and consent of both parties, or of the husband alone, some reasons will be here urg'd as shall not need to decline the touch. But first I shall recite what hath bin already yeilded by others in favour of this opinion. *Grotius* and many more agree that notwithstanding what Christ spake therin to the conscience, the  
20 Magistrate is not therby enjoyn'd ought against the preservation of civil peace, of equity, and of convenience. Among these *Fagius* is most remarkable, and gives the same liberty of pronouncing divorce to the Christian Magistrate, as the  
25 Mosaick had. *For whatever saith he, Christ spake to the regenerat, the Judge hath to deal with the vulgar: if therefore any through hardnesse of heart will not be a tolerable wife or husband, it will be lawfull as well now as of old to passe the*

*bill of divorce, not by privat, but by publicke authority. Nor doth man separate them then, but God by his law of divorce giv'n by Moses. What can hinder the Magistrate from so doing, to whose government all outward things are subject,*

5 *to separate and remove from perpetual vexation and no small danger, those bodies whose minds are already separate: it being his office to procure peaceable and convenient living in the Common-wealth; and being as certain also, that they so necessarily separated cannot all receive a single life. And this*

10 *I observe that our divines doe generally condemn separation of bed and board, without the liberty of second choice: if that therfore in some cases be most purely necessary, as who so blockish to deny, then is this also as needfull. Thus farre by others is already well stept, to inform us that divorce is not a*

15 *matter of Law but of Charity: if there remain a furlong yet to end the question, these following reasons may serve to gain it with any apprehension not too unlearned, or too wayward. First because oftentimes the causes of seeking divorce reside so deeply in the radical and innocent affections of nature, as is*

20 *not within the diocese of Law to tamper with. Other relations may aptly enough be held together by a civil and vertuous love. But the duties of man and wife are such as are chiefly conversant in that love, which is most ancient and meerly naturall; whose two prime statutes are to joyn it self*

25 *to that which is good and acceptable and friendly; and to turn aside and depart from what is disagreeable, displeasing and unlike: of the two this latter is the strongest, and most equal to be regarded: for although a man may often be unjust in*

seeking that which he loves, yet he can never be unjust or blamable in retiring from his endles trouble and distast, whenas his tarrying can redound to no true content on either side. Hate is of all things the mightiest divider, nay, is division it self. To couple hatred therefore though wedlock try  
5 all her golden links, and borrow to her aid all the iron manacles and fetters of Law, it does but seek to twist a rope of sand, which was a task, they say, that pos'd the divell. And that sluggish feind in hell *Ocnus*, whom the Poems tell of,  
10 brought his idle cordage to as good effect, which never serv'd to bind with, but to feed the Asse that stood at his elbow. And that the restrictive Law against divorce, attains as little to bind any thing truly in a disjoynted mariage, or to keep it bound, but servs only to feed the ignorance, and definitive  
15 impertinence of a doltish Canon, were no absurd allusion. To hinder therefore those deep and serious regresses of nature in a reasonable soul parting from that mistak'n help which he justly seeks in a person created for him, recollecting himself from an unmeet help which was never meant, and to  
20 detain him by compulsion in such a unpredestin'd misery as this, is in diameter against both nature and institution: but to interpose a jurisdictional power upon the inward and irremediable disposition of man, to command love and sympathy, to forbid dislike against the guiltles instinct of nature, is not  
25 within the Province of any Law to reach, and were indeed an uncommodious rudenesse, not a just power: for that Law may bandy with nature, and traverse her sage motions, was an error in *Callicles* the Rhetorician, whom *Socrates* from high

principles confutes in *Plato's Gorgias*. If therefore divorce may be so natural, and that law and nature are not to goe contrary, then to forbid divorce compulsively, is not only against nature, but against law.

- 5 Next it must be remember'd that all law is for some good that may be frequently attain'd, without the admixture of a worse inconvenience; and therefore many grosse faults, as ingratitude and the like, which are too farre within the soul, to be cur'd by constraint of law, are left only to be wrought  
10 on by conscience and perswasion. Which made *Aristotle* in the 10th of his *Ethicks* to *Nicomachus*, aim at a kind of division of law into private or perswasive, and publick or compulsive. Hence it is that the law forbidding divorce, never attains to any good end of such prohibition, but rather multi-  
15 plies evil. For if natures resistlesse sway in love or hate bee once compell'd, it grows carelesse of it selfe, vitious, uselesse to friend, unserviceable and spiritlesse to the Commonwealth. Which *Moses* rightly foresaw, and all wise Lawgivers that ever knew man, what kind of creature he was.  
20 The Parlament also and Clergy of England were not ignorant of this, when they consented that *Harry* the eighth might put away his Queen *Anne* of Cleve, whom he could not like after he had been wedded halfe a yeare; unlesse it were that contrary to the proverb, they made a necessity of  
25 that which might have been a vertue in them to doe. For even the freedome and eminence of mans creation gives him to be a Law in this matter to himselfe, being the head of the other Sex which was made for him: whom therefore though

he ought not to injure, yet neither should he be forc't to retain in society to his own overthrow, nor to heare any judge therin above himself. It being also an unseemly affront to the sequestr'd and vail'd modesty of that sex, to have her unpleasingnesse and other concealments bandied up and down, 5 and aggravated in open Court by those hir'd masters of tongue-fence. Such uncomely exigences it befell no lesse a Majesty then *Henry* the eighth to be reduc't to; who finding just reason in his conscience to forgoe his brothers wife, after 10 many indignities of being deluded, and made a boy of by those his two Cardinall Judges, was constrain'd at last for want of other proof that she had been carnally known by Prince *Arthur*, ev'n to uncover the nakednesse of that vertuous Lady, and to recite openly the obscene evidence of his 15 brothers Chamberlain. Yet it pleas'd God to make him see all the tyranny of *Rome*, by discovering this which they exercis'd over divorce; and to make him the beginner of a reformation to this whole Kingdome by first asserting into his *familiary* power the right of just divorce. Tis true, an adul- 20 tresse cannot be sham'd enough by any publick proceeding: but that woman whose honour is not appeach't, is lesse injur'd by a silent dismission, being otherwise not illiberally dealt with, then to endure a clamouring debate of utterlesse things, in a busines of that civill secrecy and difficult discern- 25 ing, as not to bee over-much question'd by neerest friends. Which drew that answer from the greatest and worthiest *Roman* of his time *Paulus Emilius*, being demanded why hee would put away his wife for no visible reason, *This Shoo,*

said he, and held it out on his foot, *is a neat shoo, a new shoo, and yet none of you know where it wrings me*: much lesse by the unfamiliar cognisance of a fee'd gamester can such a private difference be examin'd, neither ought it.

- 5 Again, if Law aim at the firm establishment and preservation of matrimoniall faith, wee know that cannot thrive under violent means, but is the more violated. It is not when two unfortunately met are by the Canon forc't to draw in that yoke an unmercifull dayes work of sorrow till death unhar-
- 10 nesse 'em, that then the Law keeps mariage most unviolated and unbrok'n: but when the Law takes order that mariage be accountant and responsible to perform that society, whether it be religious, civill, or corporal, which may be conscionably requir'd and claim'd therein, or else to be dissolv'd if it can-
- 15 not be undergone: This is to make mariage most indissoluble, by making it a just and equall dealer, a performer of those due helps which instituted the covnant, being otherwise a most unjust contract, and no more to be maintain'd under tuition of law, then the vilest fraud, or cheat, or theft
- 20 that may be committed. But because this is such a secret kind of fraud or theft, as cannot bee discern'd by law, but only by the plaintife himself, therefore to divorce was never counted a politicall or civill offence neither to *Jew* nor *Gentile*, nor by any judicial intendment of Christ, further then could be dis-
- 25 cern'd to transgresse the allowance of *Moses*, which was of necessity so large, that it doth all one as if it sent back the matter undeterminable at law, and intractable by rough dealing, to have instructions and admonitions bestow'd about it

by them whose spirituall office is to adjure and to denounce,  
and so left to the conscience. The Law can onely appoint the  
just and equall conditions of divorce, and is to look how it is  
an injury to the divorc't, which in truth it can be none, as a  
5 meer separation; for if she consent, wherein has the Law to  
right her? or consent not; then is it either just, and so de-  
serv'd; or if unjust, such in all likelihood was the divorcer,  
and to part from an unjust man is a happinesse, and no injury  
to bee lamented. But suppose it be an injury, the law is not  
10 able to amend it, unles she think it other then a miserable  
redress to return back from whence she was expell'd, or but  
intreated to be gone, or else to live apart still married without  
marriage, a married widow. Last, if it be to chast'n the di-  
vorcer, what Law punishes a deed which is not morall, but  
15 natural, a deed which cannot certainly be found to be an in-  
jury, or how can it be punisht by prohibiting the divorce, but  
that the innocent must equally partake both in the shame and  
in the smart. So that which way soever we look the Law can  
to no rationall purpose forbid divorce, it can only take care  
20 that the conditions of divorce be not injurious. Thus then we  
see the trial of law how impertinent it is to this question of  
divorce, how helplesse next, and then how hurtfull.

---

## CHAP. XXII.

*The last Reason, why divorce is not to be restrain'd by Law,  
it being against the Law of nature and of Nations. The  
25 larger proof wherof referr'd to Mr. Seldens Book De jure*

*naturali & gentium. An objection of Paræus answer'd. How it ought to be order'd by the Church. That this will not breed any worse inconvenience nor so bad as is now suffer'd.*

- 5 **T**HEREFORE the last reason why it should not be, is the example we have, not only from the noblest and wisest Common-wealths, guided by the clearest light of human knowledge, but also from the divine testimonies of God himself, lawgiving in person to a sanctify'd people.
- 10 That all this is true, who so desires to know at large with least pains, and expects not heer overlong rehearsals of that which is by others already so judiciously gather'd, let him hast'n to be acquainted with that noble volume written by our learned *Selden*, *Of the law of nature & of Nations*, a
- 15 work more useful and more worthy to be perus'd, whosoever studies to be a great man in wisdom, equity, and justice, then all those *decretals*, and *sumles sums*, which the *Pontifical Clerks* have doted on, ever since that unfortunat mother famously sinn'd thrice, and dy'd impenitent of her bringing
- 20 into the world those two misbegott'n infants, & for ever infants, *Lombard & Gratian*, him the compiler of Canon iniquity, tother the *Tubalcain* of scholastick Sophistry, whose overspreading *barbarism* hath not only infus'd their own bastardy upon the fruitfulest part of human learning; not
- 25 only dissipated and dejected the clear light of nature in us, & of nations, but hath tainted also the fountains of divine doctrine, & render'd the pure and solid Law of God unbeneficial to us by their calumnious dunceries. Yet this Law which



their unskilfulnesse hath made liable to all ignominy, the purity and wisdom of this Law shall be the buckler of our dispute. Liberty of divorce we claim not, we think not but from this Law; the dignity, the faith, the authority therof is  
5 now grown among Christians, O astonishment! a labour of no mean difficulty and envy to defend. That it should not be counted a faltring dispenſe; a flattring permission of sin, the bil of adultery, a snare, is the expence of all this apology. And all that we ſolicite is, that it may be ſuffer'd to ſtand in the  
10 place where God ſet it amidſt the firmament of his holy Laws to ſhine, as it was wont, upon the weakneſſes and errors of men perishing els in the ſincerity of their honeſt purpoſes: for certain there is no memory of whordoms and adulteries left among us now, when this warranted freedom  
15 of Gods own giving is made dangerous and diſcarded for a ſcrowle of licence. It muſt be your ſuffrages and Votes, O English men, that this exploded decree of God and *Moses* may ſcape, and come off fair without the cenſure of a ſhamefull abrogating: which, if yonder Sun ride ſure, and mean  
20 not to break word with us to morrow, was never yet abrogated by our Saviour. Give ſentence, if you pleaſe, that the frivolous Canon may reverse the infallible judgement of *Moses* and his great director. Or if it be the reformed writers, whoſe doctrine perſwades this rather, their reaſons I dare af-  
25 firm are all ſilenc't, unleſſe it be only this. *Paræus* on the Corinthians would prove that hardneſs of heart in divorce is no more now to be permitted, but to be amerc't with fine and imprisonment. I am not willing to diſcover the forgettings

of reverend men, yet here I must. What article or clause of the whole new Cov'nant can Paræus bring to exasperat the judicial Law, upon any infirmity under the Gospel? (I say infirmity, for if it were the high hand of sin, the Law as little  
5 would have endur'd it as the Gospel) it would not stretch to the dividing of an inheritance; it refus'd to condemn adultery, not that these things should not be don at Law, but to shew that the Gospel hath not the least influence upon judicial Courts, much lesse to make them sharper, and more  
10 heavy; lest of all to arraine before a temporal Judge that which the Law without summons acquitted. But saith he, the law was the time of youth, under violent affections, the Gospel in us is mature age, and ought to subdue affections. True, and so ought the Law too, if they be found inordinat, and not  
15 meerly natural and blameles. Next I distinguish that the time of the Law is compar'd to youth, and pupillage in respect of the ceremonial part, which led the Jewes as children through corporal and garish rudiments, untill the fulnes of time should reveal to them the higher lessons of faith and redemption.  
20 This is not meant of the moral part, therin it soberly concern'd them not to be babies, but to be men in good earnest: the sad and awfull majesty of that Law was not to be jested with; to bring a bearded nonage with lascivious dispensations before that throne, had bin a leud affront, as it is now a  
25 grosse mistake. But what discipline is this Paræus to nourish violent affections in youth, by cockring and wanton indulgences, and to chastise them in mature age with a boyish rod of correction. How much more coherent is it to Scripture,

that the Law as a strict Schoolmaster should have punisht every trespasse without indulgence so banefull to youth, and that the Gospel should now correct that by admonition and reproof only, in free and mature age, which was punisht  
5 with stripes in the childhood and bondage of the Law. What therefore it allow'd then so fairly, much lesse is to be whipt now, especially in penal Courts: and if it ought now to trouble the conscience, why did that angry accuser and condemner Law repreev it? So then, neither from *Moses* nor  
10 from Christ hath the Magistrate any authority to proceed against it. But what? Shall then the disposal of that power return again to the maister of family? Wherefore not? Since God there put it, and the presumptuous Canon thence bereft it. This only must be provided, that the ancient manner be  
15 observ'd in presence of the Minister and other grave selected Elders; who after they shall have admonisht and prest upon him the words of our Saviour, and he shall have protested in the faith of the eternal Gospel, and the hope he has of happy resurrection, that otherwise then thus he cannot doe, and  
20 thinks himself, and this his case not contain'd in that prohibition of divorce which Christ pronounc't, the matter not being of malice, but of nature, and so not capable of reconciling, to constrain him further were to unchristen him, to unman him, to throw the mountain of *Sinai* upon him, with  
25 the weight of the whole Law to boot, flat against the liberty and essence of the Gospel, and yet nothing available either to the sanctity of mariage, the good of husband, wife, or children, nothing profitable either to Church or Common-wealth;

but hurtfull and pernicious to all these respects. But this will bring in confusion. Yet these cautious mistrusters might consider, that what they thus object, lights not upon this book, but upon that which I engage against them, the book of God,  
5 and of *Moses*, with all the wisdome and providence which had forecast the worst of confusion that could succeed, and yet thought fit of such a permission. But let them be of good cheer, it wrought so little disorder among the Jews, that from *Moses* till after the captivity, not one of the Prophets  
10 thought it worth rebuking; for that of *Malachy* well lookt into, will appeare to be, not against divorcing, but rather against keeping strange Concubines, to the vexation of their *Hebrew* wives. If therefore we Christians may be thought as good and tractable as the Jews were, and certainly the pro-  
15 hibitors of divorce presume us to be better, then lesse confusion is to bee fear'd for this among us, then was among them. If wee bee worse, or but as bad, which lamentable examples confirm we are, then have we more, or at least as much need of this permitted law, as they to whom God therfore gave it  
20 (as they say) under a harsher covnant. Let not therfore the frailty of man goe on thus inventing needlesse troubles to it self, to groan under the fals imagination of a strictnes never impos'd from above; enjoyning that for duty which is an impossible & vain supererogating. *Be not righteous overmuch,*  
25 *is the counsell of Ecclesiastes, why shouldst thou destroy thy selfe?* Let us not be thus over-curious to strain at *atoms*, and yet to stop every vent and cranny of permissive liberty; lest nature wanting those needfull pores, and breathing places

which God hath not debar'd our weaknesse, either suddenly break out into some wide rupture of open vice, and frantick heresie, or else inwardly fester with repining and blasphemous thoughts, under an unreasonable and fruitless rigor of  
5 unwarranted law. Against which evils nothing can more beseech the religion of the Church, or the wisdom of the State, then to consider timely and provide. And in so doing, let them not doubt but they shall vindicate the misreputed honour of God and his great Lawgiver, by suffering him to  
10 give his own laws according to the condition of mans nature best known to him, without the unsufferable imputation of dispensing legally with many ages of ratify'd adultery. They shall recover the misattended words of Christ to the sincerity of their true sense from manifold contradictions, and shall  
15 open them with the key of charity. Many helples Christians they shall raise from the depth of sadnes and distresse, utterly unfitted, as they are, to serve God or man: many they shall reclaime from obscure and giddy sects, many regain from dissolute and brutish licence, many from desperate  
20 hardnes, if ever that were justly pleaded. They shall set free many daughters of *Israel*, not wanting much of her sad plight *whom Satan had bound eighteen years*. Man they shall restore to his just dignity, and prerogative in nature, preferring the souls free peace before the promiscuous draining of a carnall rage. Mariage from a perilous hazard and snare, they  
25 shall reduce to bee a more certain hav'n and retirement of happy society; when they shall judge according to God and *Moses*, and how not then according to Christ? when they

shall judge it more wisdom and goodnes to break that covenant seemingly and keep it really, then by compulsion of law to keep it seemingly, and by compulsion of blameles nature to break it really, at least if it were ever truly joyn'd. The  
5 vigor of discipline they may then turn with better successe upon the prostitute loosenes of the times, when men finding in themselves the infirmities of former ages, shall not be constrain'd above the gift of God in them, to unprofitable and impossible observances never requir'd from the civilest, the  
10 wisest, the holiest Nations, whose other excellencies in morall vertue they never yet could equall. Last of all, to those whose mind still is to maintain textuall restrictions, wherof the bare sound cannot consist sometimes with humanity, much lesse with charity, I would ever answer by putting them in remem-  
15 brance of a command above all commands, which they seem to have forgot, and who spake it; in comparison wherof this which they so exalt, is but a petty and subordinate precept. *Let them goe* therfore with whom I am loath to couple them, yet they will needs run into the same blindnes with the  
20 Pharises, *let them goe therfore* and consider well what this lesson means, *I will have mercy and not sacrifice*; for on that *saying all the Law and Prophets depend*, much more the Gospel whose end and excellence is mercy and peace: Or if they cannot learn that, how will they hear this, which yet I  
25 shall not doubt to leave with them as a conclusion: That God the Son hath put all other things under his own feet; but his Commandments hee hath left all under the feet of Charity.

*The end.*

# THE Doctrine & Discipline OF DIVORCE:

Restor'd to the good of both **SEXES**,  
From the bondage of **CANON LAW**, and  
other mistakes, to the true meaning of Scrip-  
ture in the Law and Gospel compar'd.

Wherein also are set down the bad consequences of  
abolishing or condemning of Sin, that which the  
Law of God allowes, and Christ abolisht not.

Now the second time revis'd and much augmented,  
In Two **BOOKS**:

To the Parliament of *England* with the Assembly.

---

The Author *J. M.*

---

**MATTH. 13. 52.**

*Every Scribe instructed to the Kingdome of Heav'n, is like the  
Maister of a house which bringeth out of his treasury things  
new and old.*

**Prov. 18. 13.**

*He that answereth a matter before he heareth it, it is folly and  
shame unto him.*

---

**LONDON,**  
Imprinted in the year 1644

## NOTES





## OF REFORMATION TOUCHING CHURCH-DISCIPLINE

THE tract, "Of Reformation Touching Church-Discipline in England: and the Causes that hitherto have hindred it. Two Bookes, Written to a Freind," was printed, without external indication of authorship, for Thomas Underhill, in 1641. There is, however, no question of Milton's authorship (see Masson, *Life of Milton*, II, 248 and note; also W. T. Hale's edition of the tract, *Yale Studies in English* LIV, (1916), p. [ix]); he acknowledges his authorship in *Defensio Secunda*. The tract appeared in the latter part of May or early in June.

There was no subsequent edition during Milton's life, but copies of the first edition differ slightly among themselves. Various typographical accidents were likely to befall during the printing of the sheets, "and," as Milton himself says, in *Arcopagitica*, "what if the Author shall be one so copious of fancy as to have many things well worth the adding come into his mind, after licencing, while the book is yet under the press—which not seldom happens to the best and diligentest writers, and that perhaps a dozen times in one book?"

The three copies in the Yale University are distinguished by Dr. Hale as follows (p. lxxxvi):

"The three copies are designated A, B, and C. Their title-pages are identical. The first variation occurs on p. 1, l. 8, where the copy which we call A has '*nations. p.*', and the other two, which we call B and C, have '*nattionsp.*' The sec-

ond variation is the absence from C of the printer's sign 'A, OF,' which occurs in both A and B on the lower margin (p. 1). By means of these two variations we have a means at once of differentiating the three copies. We call that one A which has '*nations. p.*' (p. 1, l. 8), and the printer's sign 'A, OF' on its lower margin and that one B which has '*nattonsp.*' and the printer's sign; and that one C which has '*nattonsp.*' but lacks the printer's sign."

These designations are followed in the present edition, which happens to be set up from a photostatic reproduction of the New York Public Library copy, which is of the B type. This has been corrected by the three copies in the Yale Library, A (press-mark Z 45  $\frac{22}{23}$ ), B (press-mark Z77 149), and C (press-mark Zd  $\frac{1319}{6}$ ), and by the page of "Faults escap't," referred to as Errata. Where all three copies are obviously wrong the correction is made by the present editor, calling attention to the correction in a note. A, B, and C are to be regarded as agreeing with each other and with the text as printed, except as indicated in the notes. Since the printer, however, had in his hands certain sheets in both a corrected and uncorrected state, it is to be expected that these will be found bound up in varying combinations in different copies. Thus the New York Public Library copy (type B) and the Yale copy called A both have page 19 (page 16 of this edition) in the uncorrected state, while the Yale copies B and C have a page in which the corrections called for in the Errata have been made by the printer.

In preparing the text occasional turned *n* and *u* and the

substitution of one for the other have not been recorded. A stroke over the vowel indicating *n*, as *commō*, *thē*, has been silently expanded. In the notes, a dash before the number indicates the line number in the text.

## PAGE 1

—3 frequent,] ABC frequent CORRECTED FROM ERRATA. —11  
other,] B other: —13 deferr'd,] B deferr'd; —21 impure]  
B mpure

## PAGE 2

—1 Interpreters,] AC Interpreters —7 Paganisme] B Pagan-  
isme, sensuall] ABC seuuall CORRECTED FROM ERRATA. —16  
circumscrib'd,] B circumscrib'd —26 duties,] B duties

## PAGE 4

—1 exorcism,] ABC exorcisme, CORRECTED FROM ERRATA. —9  
adoration,] ABC adoration CORRECTED FROM ERRATA.

## PAGE 5

—2 Ignorance] ABC Ignornnce CORRECTED FROM ERRATA. —10  
*Tongues*] B *Tonguas* —17 to bee . . . of *lost Truth*,] B to be . . .  
of the *lost Truth*, AN EXAMINATION OF THE ORIGINAL EDD. MAKES  
IT CERTAIN THAT THE READING OF B WAS CORRECTED IN A AND C, FIRST,  
BY STRIKING OUT the; THE WORD set WAS THEN THROWN BY THE  
PRINTER INTO THAT LINE FROM THE LINE ABOVE TO FILL IT OUT, AND  
THE WORD BE EXPANDED TO bee, PARTLY FILLING THE SPACE THUS  
LEFT. A AND C THEREFORE REPRESENT A REVISION, AND ONE PRE-  
SUMABLY ONLY THE AUTHOR WOULD HAVE TAKEN THE TROUBLE TO  
MAKE. —20 Christendome)] ABC Christendome —22 she]  
ABC we CORRECTED FROM ERRATA. —25 stiff'd] B stifi'd

## PAGE 6

—3 yet in Discipline, which is the *execution*] ABC yet in the  
*execution* CORRECTED FROM ERRATA. —12 Church] ABC Churth

## PAGE 16

—17 himselfe:] AB (N.Y.P.L.) himselfe —19 colleagues] AB  
(N.Y.P.L.) *collrgues* CORRECTED FROM ERRATA. —27 known] AB  
(N.Y.P.L.) know CORRECTED FROM ERRATA.

## PAGE 19

—15 Churchmen] ABC Chutchmen

## PAGE 30

—4 And] ABC and —23 those] ABC *thosi*

## PAGE 31

—4 *recourse*] ABC *recourse*

## PAGE 39

—7 *turnes*.] ABC *turnes*, —20 *captivity*.] ABC *captivity*

## PAGE 42

—25 *principality*;] ABC *principality*.

## PAGE 61

—21—22 *yea, other Nations*] ABC *yea, all other Nations* CORRECTED FROM ERRATA.

## PAGE 63

—14 *other*] ABC *others* CORRECTED FROM ERRATA.

## PAGE 73

—2 *undeflowr'd*] ABC *un-flowr'd* CATCHWORD IS *deflower'd*  
IN ABC THE FOLLOWING APPEARS:

*Faults escap't in the printing are heer corrected.*

*Page 1, l. 5. at frequent must be a comma, p. 2. l. 27. sensual. p. 4. l. 31. exorcism. p. 5. l. 9. at adoration a comma. p. 6. l. 4. in ignorance there wants an a. l. 29. she taught. p. 7. l. 9. adde in Discipline, which is the execution. p. 19. l. 4. colleagues. l. 13. known. p. 70. l. 6. yea other nations. p. 72. l. 5. each other state. l. 7. at common is no period, but a comma.*

—3 *comma*.] ABC *comma*.

—6 *nations. p.*] BC *nationsp.*

## OF PRELATICAL EPISCOPACY

MILTON'S second pamphlet, "Of Prelatical Episcopacy, and Whether it may be deduc'd from the Apostolical times by vertue of those Testimonies which are alleg'd to that purpose in some late Treatises," etc. was likewise printed anonymously in 1641, for Thomas Underhill, the publisher of his "Of Reformation." It was, as its full title indicates, a reply to recent pamphlets, chiefly to Archbishop Ussher's "The Judgement of Dr. Rainoldes touching the originall of Episcopacy."

The present edition is printed from a photostatic reproduction of the copy in the New York Public Library. It does not appear to differ from the Yale University copy. In both, pages 1-8 inclusive lack the page number. There was no later edition during Milton's lifetime.

PAGE 85

—5 doubtlesse] doub-lesse

PAGE 87

—17 MARGINAL REFERENCE IS p *Euseb.* l. 6. THE YALE COPY SHOWS *οφξε*.

AN UNDECIPHERABLE LETTER BEFORE THE GREEK O. THE PRINTER APPEARS TO HAVE MADE CONFUSION OF THE AUTHOR'S ATTEMPT TO REFER TO Eusebius' *Historia Ecclesiastica* BY BOOK AND CHAPTER, IN GREEK.

—20 *Polycrates*] *Polyerates* —28 excommunicated] Excommunicated

PAGE 92

—9 affaires.] affaires

## ANIMADVERSIONS UPON THE REMONSTRANTS DEFENCE

**A**NIMADVERSIONS upon 'The Remonstrants Defence against Smectymnuus," Milton's third pamphlet, issued very shortly after the second by the publisher of both the earlier ones, is likewise anonymous. It is a reply to Bishop Hall's "A Defence of the Humble Remonstrance," which had itself been called forth by the reply of Smectymnuus to the Bishop's "Humble Remonstrance."

The present edition is printed from a photostatic reproduction of the New York Public Library copy, which is in a few details more correctly printed than the Yale University copy. There was no subsequent edition of this pamphlet during Milton's lifetime.

PAGE 107

—22 *insolence*] *insolence*

PAGE 121

—4 wound;] IT IS DIFFICULT TO SAY WHAT PUNCTUATION IS INTENDED. —6 them.] them,

PAGE 128

—21 Have] have

PAGE 139

—27 the] rhe

PAGE 153

—15 Collective. As] Collective, as

PAGE 155

—3 may bee] may bee may be

PAGE 158

—3 hell-pestering] hell pestering

PAGE 178

—22 which] wich

## THE REASON OF CHURCH-GOVERNMENT

MILTON'S fourth pamphlet, "The Reason of Church-government Urg'd against Prelaty," was published early in 1641-2 (Masson, II, p. 361). Unlike the three preceding pamphlets it bears the author's name, By Mr. John Milton, on the title-page. The publisher is John Rothwell. In building his argument Milton had his eye on a collection of pamphlets, "Certaine Briefe Treatises," etc., published in 1641.

The pages are sometimes badly numbered; that is, what should be p. 17 is numbered 25; 20 and 21 are numbered 28 and 29 respectively, and so on, but they are bound in the correct order. The running head is sometimes The Reason of Church-government, and sometimes The Reason of Church-government, &C. The present edition is printed from a photostatic reproduction of a copy in the Columbia University library. The leaves have been cut so as now and then to shear away a line at the bottom of the page. These have been supplied from the New York Public Library copy. There was no other edition during Milton's lifetime.

PAGE 188

—23 render] tender CORRECTED FROM ERRATA.

PAGE 223

—17 purpos't] purpos't

PAGE 225

—5 countries,] countries CORRECTED FROM ERRATA.

PAGE 230

—17-18 treasure] treasures CORRECTED FROM ERRATA.



## PAGE 242

—9 lighten] enlighten CORRECTED FROM ERRATA. —14 sub-  
scribe] subscribe CORRECTED FROM ERRATA.

## PAGE 246

—26 shame?] PUNCTUATION UNCERTAIN.

## PAGE 268

—6 arches] ches CORRECTED FROM ERRATA.

THE FOLLOWING IS PRINTED ON THE LAST PAGE:

Faults escap't in Printing are here corrected.

Page 6 line 10. for *tender*, read it *render*. p. 30. l. 7. after *countries*  
there wants a *Comma*, p. 34. l. 11. read it *treasure*. p. 41. l. 31. *lighten*.  
l. 35. read it *subscribe*. p. 58. l. 34. read *arches*

## AN APOLOGY AGAINST A PAMPHLET

**M**ILTON'S fifth pamphlet, "An Apology against a Pamphlet call'd A Modest Confutation of the Animadversions of the Remonstrant against Smectymnuus," is dated 1642 and was published, anonymously, by John Rothwell. The pamphlet to which Milton replies, "A Modest Confutation of a Slanderous and Scurrilous Libell intituled Animadversions upon the Remonstrant's Defence against Smectymnuus," had appeared in the same year, and is thought to be mainly the work of Bishop Hall (Masson, II, 394 ff.).

The present edition is based on a photostatic reproduction of a copy in the New York Public Library, which seems not to disagree with the Yale University copy. There was no later edition of this pamphlet during Milton's lifetime.

PAGE 316

—24 read] speak CORRECTED FROM ERRATA.

PAGE 326

—17 opinions] opi-ons

PAGE 343

—3 seems] seemss —5 And] and —25 orisons.] orisons,

PAGE 346

—17 Philosophy] Philosohy

PAGE 347

—13 Carpenter,] Carpenter

PAGE 352

—24 where] were

PAGE 357

—11 and] add

PAGE 362

—4 tongue,] tongu,

PAGE 366

—8 which] whicst

THE FOLLOWING IS PRINTED ON THE LAST PAGE:

Pag. 25. lin. 9. *for speak correct it read*

## THE DOCTRINE AND DISCIPLINE OF DIVORCE

**T**HE *Doctrine and Discipline of Divorce* appeared in two editions; the title-page of the first bears the subscription, "LONDON, Printed by T. P. and M. S. In Goldsmiths Alley. 1643," to which Thomason has added "Aug: 1st" in the British Museum copy. The author's name does not appear anywhere in the tract. A second edition was brought out in London in 1644 and 1645, but the name of the printer is not given. The 1644 printing is extant in two slightly differing states, and that of 1645 in three. These five states will hereafter be referred to as 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, the first edition being no. 1 of the series. The title-pages of texts 2, 3, and 6 give "The Author J. M."; 4 and 5 give "The Author I. M." In all five of these texts the prefatory address to parliament is signed by the author in full.

The first edition, which has never been reprinted, is a small tract of 48 quarto pages, with two pages of addenda, the main body of the text being unbroken in any way. The second edition, all texts of which are practically identical in general content, represents a complete reworking of the first, amplifying the original to 82 quarto pages, dividing the text into books and chapters, each chapter with a brief heading, and prefacing the whole tract with an address entitled "To the Parliament of England, with the Assembly."

Of the 1644 printing, text 3 is now listed for the first time, although copies of it have been readily accessible in the library of Christ's College, Cambridge, and the New York

Public Library; but it does not seem possible to determine whether it was printed before or after text 2. Nor has any attempt been made up to the present to establish the order in which the three printings of 1645 issued from the press. In the latest bibliography of the tract\* the four then known texts of the second edition are listed as follows:

- 1644: Ed. 2. State A. *Lond.* 4°.
- 1645: Ed. 2. State B. (no errata). *Lond.* 4°.
- 1645: Ed. 2. State C. (two line errata). *Lond.* 4°.
- 1645: Ed. 2. State D. (three line errata). *Lond.* 4°.

It is obvious, however, that State B is later than either of the other printings of 1645, since its spelling has been noticeably revised and since both of the others resemble State A much more closely than it does. States C and D are practically identical up to the last two pages, where State C follows State A; yet there is some evidence that State D preceded State C in appearance.† The entire list of printings in chronological order, as nearly as it can be established, is therefore as follows:

1. 1643: first edition; 48 pp. + 2 pp. addenda
2. 1644: second edition; vi + 82 pp. (pp. 43 and 44 misnumbered as 45 and 46); two-line errata (State A)
3. 1644: variant of second edition (now listed for the first

\* *Milton Tercentenary, The Portraits, prints and writings of John Milton*, by Dr Williamson, with an appendix & index by Mr C. Sayle. Exhibited at Christ's College, Cambridge. 1908.

† But a single variation in the two texts appears in the first 80 pages: on p. 37, l. 24, the C text has *neighbors* where the D text has *neibours*, and the *and* following in the D text appears in C as an ampersand, in order that the length of the entire line may not be affected. This change seems therefore to have been an intentional one, and the alteration in spelling seems to indicate that C is the later of the two. Furthermore, were D the later it might be expected that it would follow C or else A in the last two pages, but this is not the case.

- time); vi + 82 pp. (pp. 43, 44, 70, 72 misnumbered as 45, 46, 76, 70 respectively); two-line errata
4. 1645: variant of second edition; vi + 82 pp. (pp. 42, 43, 46, 47 misnumbered as 44, 45, 48, 49 respectively); three-line errata (State D)
  5. 1645: variant of second edition; vi + 82 pp. (pp. 42, 43, 46, 47 misnumbered as 44, 45, 48, 49 respectively); two-line errata (State C)
  6. 1645: variant of second edition; vi + 82 pp. (pp. 42, 43, 46, 47, 73 misnumbered as 44, 45, 48, 49, 69 respectively, the last error being continued throughout the remainder of the tract, the last page therefore appearing as p. 78); no errata, but only one of the changes called for in the errata of the other texts is actually made in this text. (State B)

The present edition prints from a photostat of an original copy of text 2 now in the library of Columbia University, compared throughout with the copy itself and where necessary with another original copy in the library of Yale University. The copies of the other texts collated with that here reprinted are: the Yale University copy of no. 1, the New York Public Library copy of no. 3, the Yale University copy of no. 4, the Cambridge University copy of no. 5, and the Columbia University copy of no. 6, compared with the Yale University copy of the same.

As already noted the second edition differs completely from the first, though actually the difference consists chiefly in the addition of passages not to be found in the earlier text. As the first edition is not broken into chapters, all headings appearing in later texts are of course not present in it; their absence will not be noted hereafter. Of the five printings of the second edition three (nos. 2, 4, 6) differ considerably in spelling, punctuation, and pagination; but text 3 is quite sim-

ilar to 2,\* and text 5 is identical with text 4, except for the two alterations on p. 37 already noted and except for the entire last two pages as also noted above; otherwise both texts were printed from the same type, as is repeatedly shown by typographical peculiarities. The notes to the present edition, in addition to giving passages not present in text 1, present the variant readings of all six texts, and also the occasional emendations made in the text as here reprinted in cases of obvious errors on the part of the original printer. A dash before a number indicates the line number in the text.

\* The pagination of the two texts is identical throughout except in the case of p. 33. Up to p. 33 and from p. 56 to the end of the tract, the texts are identical in every way except for five slight variations, which are to be attributed to the failure of the ink to make impress in one case or the other, as further typographical peculiarities show these pages to have been printed from the same type. The middle portion of the tract (pp. 33 to 55) includes exactly three signatures (F, G, H), which in text 3 exhibit differences from all other texts. In this portion text 3 corrects a number of errors in 2, though by no means all of them, but falls into other errors not present in 2.

## TITLE-PAGE

&] 1, 6 and —DIVORCE:] 6 DIVORCE; —bondage] 6  
Bondage —the true . . . compar'd.] 1 Christian freedom, guided by  
the Rule of Charity. —Wherin] 1, 6 Wherein are set . . .  
*J. M.*] 1 many places of Scripture, have recover'd their long-lost mean-  
ing. Seasonable to be now thought on in the Reformation intended.  
—allowes] 6 allows —revis'd] 6 Revis'd, —augmented] 6  
Augmented —Parliament] 6 Parliamēt —*England*] 6 *England*,  
*J. M.*] 4, 5 *I. M.* —*Kingdome*] 6 *Kingdom* —*Maister*] 6  
*Master* —*house*] 6 *House* —*treasury*] 1 *treasurie* 6 *Treasury*  
*new and old*] 1 *old and new* —Prov. . . . *him.*] NOT IN 1.  
LONDON,] 4, 5, 6 LONDON: —Imprinted . . . 1644.] 1 Printed  
by *T. P.* and *M. S.* In Goldsmiths Alley. 1643. —yeare] 6 Year  
—1644] 4, 5, 6 1645

## PAGE 367

PARLAMENT] 6 PARLIAMENT THE TEXT OF THE ADDRESS IS IN ROMAN IN 2 AND 3, BUT IN ITALIC IN 4, 5, AND 6. THE WORDS THAT ARE IN ITALIC IN 2 AND 3 ARE IN ROMAN IN 4, 5, AND 6, UNLESS OTHERWISE NOTED. —2 Parliament] 6 Parliament —3 and] 4, 5 & Maisters] 4, 5, 6 Masters have ever] 4, 5, 6 ever have —5 bee not] 4, 5 be not 6 not be —5, 10 Custome] 6 Custom —9 divine] 6 Divine will] 4, 5 wil originall blindness] 6 Original blindness —11 instructor] 6 instructor —12 vision] 6 Vision —13 knowledge] 6 knowledg —16 heedlesse] 6 heedless unhealthily,] 6 unhealthily —17 certaine] 4, 5, 6 certain —18 wholesome] 6 wholesom soundnesse] 6 soundness —19 constitution;] 6 constitution, other, then] 6 other than

## PAGE 368

—1 onely] 6 only marrs] 6 mars education] 6 Education —2 climer] 6 Climer chaire] 6 Chair —3 reported:] 6 reported, —4 profession,] 6 profession servil principles;] 6 servile principles, —5 Man] 6 man farre] 4, 5, 6 far —6 wherein] 4, 5 wherin sunke] 6 sunk —7 persue] 6 pursue —7, 13 Custome] 6 Custom —8 meere] 4, 5, 6 meer unaccomplishment] 4, 5 unaccomplishment —9 untill] 6 until inclination,] 6 inclination shee] 4, 5, 6 she accorporat] 6 accorporate selfe] 4, 5, 6 self —11 incompleatnesse] 6 incompleatness —13 Error.] 6 Error: —13 betweene] 4, 5, 6 between —15 wisdom] 6 wisdom —16 then] 6 than ages, cals] 6 Ages, calls —17 Religious] 6 religious Men] 6 men repress] 6 repress —18 encroachments] 6 incroachments worke] 4, 5, 6 work —19 mindes] 4, 5, 6 minds suttle] 6 subtle —20 Custome: Who] 6 Custom; who —21 chiefe] 4, 5, 6 chief designe] 6 design envie] 6 envy —22 cry-down] 6 cry down —23 humor,] 6 humor womb] 6 Womb teeming] 6 Teeming —24 shee] 4, 5, 6 she ought,] 6 ought —26 soule] 4, 5 soul 6 soul, —28 attaine] 4, 5, 6 attain

## PAGE 369

—2 cals] 6 calls —3 evill] 6 evil advocate] 6 Advocate —4 truth:] 6 truth; —7 envie] 6 envy —8 wisdom] 4, 5, 6 wisdom heer] 6 here —10 repeald] 4, 5, 6 repeal'd —11 only] 6 omits. —12 Canonical ignorance:] 6 Canonical ignorance, —14 Josiahs] 4, 5 Josiahs 6 Josiah's hee] 4, 5, 6 he indeavour] 6 endeavor —18 whereof] 4, 5 wherof —19 mis-judgd] 4, 5, 6 mis-judg'd —20 unlesse] 6 unless —22 regardless] 4, 5 regardlesse 6 regardless

## PAGE 370

—1, 8 then] 6 than —2 heare] 4, 5, 6 hear *Truth*] 4, 5, 6  
truth —3 *preacht;*] 4, 5, 6 preacht, *envie*] 6 envy —6  
shee] 4, 5, 6 she —8 mother] 6 Mother —9 legitimat] 6  
legitimate Church] 6 churcht father] 6 Father —10 need-  
lesse] 6 needless —11 witnesse] 6 witness —12 doubt,] 6  
doubt —13 formost] 6 foremost behalfe] 4, 5, 6 behalf  
—14 Church,] 6 Church —15 owne] 4, 5, 6 own —16  
Infamy,] 6 Infamy —17 doe] 4, 5, 6 do fretfull] 6 fretful  
—18 owne] 4, 5, 6 own —19 uprightness] 4, 5 uprightness 6  
uprightness —21 Belial] 6 Belial —25 debaucheries] 6 de-  
baucheries —26 learne] 4, 5, 6 learn —28 queasy conscience]  
6 queasie conscience,

## PAGE 371

—3 stomacks] 6 stomachs megrim] 6 Megrim —6 *the*] 6 *the*  
—6, 9 doe] 4, 5, 6 do —7 belawgiv'n] 6 belawgiv'd owne]  
4, 5, 6 own —9 cordiall] 6 cordial —10 zeale] 4, 5, 6 zeal  
—13 discusst] 6 discust removall] 4, 5, 6 removal —15 farre]  
4, 5, 6 far —16 fellow feeling] 6 fellow-feeling spurre] 4, 5, 6  
spur —17 wisdom] 6 wisdom —18 cleer'd] 6 clear'd  
—20 civil] 4, 5 civill —21 perdition,] 6 perdition —22  
goodnesse] 6 goodness —24 Booke] 4, 5, 6 Book —25 Parla-  
ment] 6 Parliament —27 devolv'd:] 6 devolv'd. —28 faith-  
full] 6 faithful

## PAGE 372

—1 fearless] 6 fearless —2 Christendome] 6 Christendom  
—3 witnesse] 6 witness mortall] 6 mortal immortall] 6 immortal  
beleeve] 6 believe —4 thinke] 4, 5, 6 think —6 from] 2, 3  
com —7 obtaind, & debarr] 4, 5, 6 obtain'd, and debar —8  
Yee] 4, 5, 6 Ye doubtlesse] 6 doubtless —9, 11, 18 yee] 4, 5, 6  
ye —10 Reform] 6 reform —11 blindnes] 6 blindness  
Religion] 6 Religion, degenerat] 6 degenerate —12 fal'n] 6  
fall'n —13 manlines] 6 manliness —14 whordoms] 6 whore-  
doms and] 4, 5 & adulteries] 6 adulteries, —16 bee] 4, 5, 6 be  
—17 successe] 6 success —19 rains] 6 reins —20 Egyptian]  
6 Egypt —23 hardnesse] 6 hardness —28 neither] 2, 3  
ther THE CATCHWORD IS NEITHER turne] 4, 5, 6 turn right] 6 right,

## PAGE 373

—2 Lawgivers] 6 Law-givers yee] 4, 5, 6 ye is] 4, 5, 6 it is  
teachers] 6 Teachers —4 powerfull] 6 powerful —7 terri-  
tory] 6 Territory dominion] 6 Dominion —9 loos'n'd] 6



loosn'd —12 bin] 6 been —13 masters] 6 Masters holi-  
 nesse] 6 holiness evill] 4, 5, 6 evil —15 obedience, then] 6  
 obedience than had set;] 6 hath set, —17 overdignifi'd] 6 over-  
 dignifi'd —18 greev'd] 4, 5, 6 griev'd then] 6 than —19  
 peevish madnesse] 6 pievish madness freedome] 6 freedom —20  
 lesse] 6 less —22 lest] 6 least —23 superstition;] 6 super-  
 stition, onely] 4, 5, 6 only —24 scarcrow] 6 scarecrow —25  
 uttle] 6 subtle —26 grosse] 6 gross —27 encounter;] 6  
 incounter, wee] 4, 5, 6 we bee] 4, 5, 6 be

## PAGE 374

—1 us,] 6 us —2 wee bee] 4, 5, 6 we be —4 taste] 6 tast  
 —5 separat] 6 separate —7 St.] 6 S. —8 Shee] 4, 5, 6 She  
 —9 sometime] 4, 5, 6 sometime diswaded] 4, 5, 6 disswaded  
 —9, 12, 21 mariage] 6 marriage —10 fulfill] 6 fulfil onely]  
 6 only —13 lonelinesse] 6 loneliness —15 fiercnes] 4, 5  
 fierceness 6 fierceness —16 lonelinesse] 4, 5 loneliness 6 lone-  
 liness —16, 17 yee] 4, 5, 6 ye Senat] 6 Senate —18 pro-  
 ceedings:] 6 proceedings. —19 marries] 4, 5 maries —22  
 authority] 6 Authority Covnant] 6 Cov'nant —25 Covnant]  
 4, 5, 6 Cov'nant hee] 4, 5, 6 he —28 Magistrat] 6 Magistrate

## PAGE 375

—1, 5 expresse] 6 express —2 nature] 6 nature, economical]  
 4, 5 economical] 6 Economical —3 misfortune,] 4, 5 misfortune  
 CATCHWORD fortune, 6 misfortune —4 foure] 6 four directors]  
 6 Directors —5 law] 6 Law —6, 11 wherof] 6 whereof  
 —7 sit] 6 omits. —8, 16 then] 6 than unhappines] 6 unhappi-  
 ness —9 farewell] 6 farewell —10 state] 4, 5, 6 State  
 —10, 23 evill] 4, 5, 6 evil —11 redresse] 6 redress —12  
 spiritfull] 6 spiritual —13 willing,] 6 willing carefull] 6  
 careful therefore] 4, 5 therfore —14 examin'd,] 6 examin'd  
 free-hold] 6 freehold —17 a new,] 6 anew consider'd;] 6  
 consider'd —19 placers] 6 places Counsels] 6 Councils  
 —20 liberall] 6 liberal —21 breeding] 6 breeding, —23 and]  
 6 & —24 waies] 6 ways Lord,] 6 Lord and] 4, 5, 6 & faith-  
 full] 6 faithful —25 pit falling dispenses] 6 pit-falling dispences  
 —28 disposition,] 6 disposition

## PAGE 376

—4 and] 6 & —6 Senators] 4, 5, 6 Senators, —7 judg-  
 ment] 4, 5 judgement —9 your] 2, 3, 4, 5, 6 to your stedly]  
 6 steady —10 heritage] 4, 5 heritage, —11 wherewith]  
 6 wherewith love] 4, 5, 6 love, —13 wil] 4, 5, 6 will —14

lesse] 6 less neighbours] 4, 5, 6 neighbors —16 well order'd]  
 6 well-order'd —17 Common-wealth.] 6 Commone-wealth  
 —20 accurat] 6 accurate —21 then] 6 than *Galilean*] 6 Gal-  
 ilæan —22 els] 4, 5, 6 else —27 Island] 4, 5, 6 lland  
 Cathedrall] 4, 5, 6 Cathedral —28 pagan] 6 Pagan England]  
 6 England

## PAGE 377

—1 reformation] 6 Reformation —2 World] 4, 5, 6 world  
*Constantine*] 4, 5 Constantine, —3 who but] 6 Who was it but  
 —6 Country men] 6 Countrey men —7 England,] 6 England  
 —9 privilege] 6 priviledge —10 Country] 6 Countrey —10,  
 14 heer] 6 here —13 will] 4, 5 wil —14 adorne] 4, 5, 6  
 adorn this;] 6 this, —16 themselv] 4, 5, 6 themselves  
 —18 Adultery] 6 adultery Deferre] 4, 5, 6 Defer —20 selfe]  
 4, 5, 6 self holines] 6 holiness —21 then] 6 than wee] 4, 5, 6  
 we bereav] 6 bereave —22 our] 6 or —23 asserters] 6  
 assertors me,] 6 me —24 farre] 4, 5, 6 far gain,] 6 gain  
 —25 don] 6 done —26 well] 4, 5 wel —27 and] 4, 5 &  
 —28 handfull] 6 handful

## PAGE 378

—1 relisht,] 6 relisht —3 sayls] 4, 5, 6 sails —4 rudi-  
 ments] 6 audiments —5 tast] 6 taste —6 bin] 6 been  
 —7 obstinacie] 6 obstinancy —9 textuists] 4, 5 texuists —10  
 prefers] 6 prefers Matrimony,] 6 Matromony —12 professe  
 Papist,] 6 profess Papist Protestant,] 6 Protestant —13 then]  
 6 than and] 2, 3, 4, 5 And —15 trial] 4, 5 triall this] 6 the  
 —16 world:] 2, 3 world. withall] 6 withal —18 wherewith]  
 6 wherewith —19 and] 6 & —21 chastity] 6 Chastity  
 mariagebed] 6 Marriage-bed —22 judicial] 4, 5 judiciall  
 —23 illiterat;] 6 illiterate, choisest] 6 choicest —24 learned-  
 est] 4, 5, 6 learnedst —25 learning] 6 learning, —27 bin]  
 6 been tongue:] 4, 5 tongue; 6 tongue, —28 don] 6 done

## PAGE 379

—1 judgement] 6 judgment beare] 4, 5, 6 bear —2 serv]  
 6 serve —3 verdit] 6 verdict —4 heer] 6 here nameles]  
 6 nameless addresse] 6 address —5 Parliament] 6 Parliament  
 —6 ingratefull] 6 ingrateful —7 watchfulnes] 6 watchfulness

## PAGE 380

—HEADING Divorce;] 1, 2, 3, 4, 5 *Divorce*; 6 Divorce, Re-  
 stor'd . . . both] 2, 3, 4, 5, 6 *IN ITALIC*. —Sexes] 2, 3, 4, 5 *IN*  
*ITALIC*. —Booke] 6 Book —1 owne] 6 own —2 evils] 6 evils

*hee*] 6 *he* —3 *canonists*] 6 *Canonists decrees*] 6 *Decrees divorce*] 6 *Divorce* —4 *imperiall*] 6 *Imperial Lawes*] 6 *Laws fram'd*] 4, 5, 6 *framed* —6 *generall*] 6 *general* —10 *restrain*] 1 *restraine* —11 *devill*] 6 *Devil work*] 1 *worke* —14 *mind*] 1 *minde enough*] 1 *anough*

## PAGE 381

—1 *generall*] 6 *general human*] 1, 4, 5, 6 *humane soon*] 1 *soone*  
—2 *farre*] 6 *for* —4 *harmfull*] 6 *harmful perversnesse*] 6 *perverseness* —6 *owne*] 6 *own* —7 *misery*] 1 *miseries* —8 *again*] 6 *again marvell*] 6 *marvel* —9 *evill*] 6 *evil ev'n*] 4, 5, 6 *even* —10 *principall*] 6 *principal* —11 *continuell*] 6 *continual* —12 *perplexitie*] 6 *perplexity* —12, 22 *then*] 6 *than* —14 *And*] 1 *and* —16 *sacrificer,*] 6 *sacrificer*;  
—17 *jaylor*] 1 *jayler only*] 1, 4, 5, 6 *onely* —19 *Sabbath day:*] 6 *Sabbath-day*;  
—20 *work unlawfull*] 4, 5 *thing unlawful*] 6 *thing unlawful* —22 *marriage?*] 1 *marriage*, —24 *giv'n*] 1 *giv'n them* 6 *given matrimony*] 6 *Matrimony* —25 *seldome*] 6 *seldom mischief*] 6 *mischiefe* —27 *captivity*] 1 *captivitie* —28 *extreme*] 4, 5 *extreame* 6 *extream*

## PAGE 382

—1 *liberty*] 1 *libertie unmercifull*] 6 *unmerciful* —2 *marriage*] 4, 5 *marriage* —4 *cheerfull*] 6 *cheerful conversation*] 2, 3 *coveration* —5 *against*] 4, 5, 6 *of evill of*] 4, 5 *evill and* 6 *evil and* —7 *necessity*] 1 *necessitie* —9 *the*] 1 *of the nuptiall*] 6 *nuptial finde*] 1 *finde* —13 *lonelines*] 6 *loneliness* —15 *least possibility*] 1 *lest possibilitie sensuall*] 6 *sensual* —16 *enjoyment*] 4, 5, 6 *injoyment* —17 *wearisomnes*] 6 *wearisomness* —18 *and*] 1 *& despaire*] 6 *despair* —19 *calamity*] 1 *calamitie* —20 *Wise-man,*] 4, 5, 6 *wise-man own*] 4, 5 *owne* —21 *phrase*] 4, 5, 6 *Phrase evill*] 6 *evil* —22 *referre*] 6 *refer then*] 6 *than* —23 *charitie*] 6 *charity* —24 *guide*] 6 *guid meere*] 6 *meer* —25 *doubtles*] 6 *doubtless devill*] 6 *devil* —27 *daring*] 4, 5, 6 *stating*

## PAGE 383

—1 *mariage*] 6 *marriage* —5 *thought*] 4, 5, 6 *brought Sacramentall*] 6 *Sacramental* —6 *or desertion*] NOT IN 1. —6-8 *and this . . . els*] NOT IN 1. —6 *sense*] 4, 5 *sence* —7 *in*] 6 *OMITS.* —8 *els*] 6 *else in them also*] NOT IN 1. —9 *heavie*] 1, 6 *heavy disgracefull*] 6 *disgraceful superstitious*] 4, 5 *Superstitious* —10 *iniquity*] 1 *iniquitie* —11 *writt'n*] 6 *written* —12 *antiquity*] 1 *antiquitie then*] 6 *than marriage*]

1, 4, 5 mariage selfe] 6 self —13 faultles] 6 faultless —16 doctrine] 4, 5, 6 Doctrine —17 Canonically] 1 canonically 6 Canonical —18 censure] 6 Censure judiciall Court;] 6 Judicial Court, —20 and] 1 & love] 6 love, —22 mariage] 6 marriage dignity] 1 dignitie —23 soule] 6 soul goodnes] 6 goodness Christianitie] Christianity —24 civilitie] 6 civility —26 Fathers] 1 fathers living,] 6 living; —27, 28 and] 1 & —27 holines] 6 holiness life] 6 life, —28 renowne] 1, 6 renown

## PAGE 384

—1 debate,] 6 debate far] 4, 5 farre —3 learned,] 4, 5 learned; —4 equity] 1 equitie Imperiall] 1 imperiall 6 Imperial —5 decrees] 6 Decrees notes] 6 Notes *Evangelists*,] 6 *Evangelists*; —6 roughnesse] 6 roughness —8 enquire] 4, 5, 6 inquire —9 that] 1 which —9-20 Which . . . thereon,] 1 By which, and mine owne apprehension of what publick duty each man owes, I conceive my selfe exhorted among the rest —10 hopelesse] 6 hopeless —11 to,] 4, 5, 6 to authority] 6 authority —14 lesse] 6 less then] 6 than —15 comment] 6 Comment *Pentateuch*] 6 *Pentateuch*, 16 divorces] 6 Divorces be] 4, 5 bee —17 Jewes] 6 Jews —18 briefe] 6 brief —19 conceive] 6 conceive duty] 6 duty, —20 passe] 6 pass —21 I also have had] 1 I have do] NOT IN 1. —22 generall] 6 general reformation] 6 Reformation —23 Magistrate;] 6 Magistrate, —24 unspirituall] 6 unspiritual —25 Land;] 6 Land, —26 beter] 1, 6 better —26-p. 385, l. 6 This . . . additions.] NOT IN 1. —28 divorce] 6 Divorce, adultery] 6 Adultery

## PAGE 385

—2 peece] 6 piece justice] 6 Justice —3 divorce whatsoever] 6 Divorce whatsoever, —6 who] 1 that adventuring] 6 adventuring, —7 successe] 6 success 7-15 to light . . . Families)] 1 to ease & set free the minds of ingenuous and apprehensive men from this needlesse thraldome, he that can prove it lawfull and just to claime the performance of a fit and matchable conversation, no lesse essentiall to the prime scope of marriage then the gift of bodily conjunction, or els to have an equall plea of divorce as well as for that corporal deficiency; he that can but lend us the clue that windes out this labyrinth of servitude to such a reasonable and expedient liberty as this, —9 much wrong'd] 6 much-wrong'd matrimony] 6 Matrimony —10 onely] 6 only mercifull] 6 merciful —11 blisfull] 6 blissful —12 beginning;] 6 beginning, deserv] 4, 5, 6 deserve apre-

hensive] 6 apprehensive —14 bin] 6 been Kingdomes] 6 Kingdoms States,] 4, 5, 6 States —15 shall deserve] 1 deserves reck'n'd] 4, 5, 6 reckon'd —16 benefactors] 6 Benefactors civill] 6 civil life;] 6 life, inventors] 6 Inventors —17 wine] 6 Wine oyle] 6 Oyl —18 desirable] 4, 5 desirable sadnes] 6 sadness —19 licence] 6 licence, —20 levity] 6 levety —21 countnanc't] 1, 6 countenanc't —23 practiz'd] 6 practis'd bondmen] 6 Bondmen —24 luckles] 6 luckless helples matrimony] 6 helpless Matrimony Argument] 6 Argument, —25 onset] 6 on-set —26 severall oppositions:] 6 several oppositions; those] 4, 5, 6 them —27 having] 4, 5, 6 have custom] 4, 5 custome 6 Custom,

## PAGE 386

—1 grosse] 6 gross matrimoniall] 6 matrimonial —2 male] 6 Male female] 6 Female think] 4, 5 thinke —3 Nevertheless] 6 Nevertheless —4 wayes] 6 ways appeare] 6 appear —5 lonelines;] 6 loneliness, —6 easie] 6 easie, —7 vain] 1 vaine marriage] 4, 5 mariage —9 onely] 6 only —11 still] 6 still, heare] 6 hear —12 equall] 6 equal —13 reverend] 6 Reverend —14 esteem] 4, 5 esteeme —15 thoughts;] 6 thoughts, —16 possest;] 6 possest, —18 selfe] 6 self —19 deserve on all hands to be not sinisterly receiv'd,] 1 deserve to be not ungently receiv'd on all hands; —21 societie] 6 society doe] 6 do —23 dispell] 6 dispel —24 sorrowes:] 1 sorrows; inchantment] 1 enchantment if that be fear'd,] NOT IN 1. —25 spell us'd,] 1 spel us'd —27 compassion;] 4, 5, 6 compassion, —28 houre] 6 hour

## PAGE 387

—1 and] 1 & —2 we] 1 wee —4 frowardnes] 6 frowardness hopeles] 6 hopeless —5 endure] 6 indure —8 Jews] 4, 5 Jewes —11 reliefe] 6 relief —12 age] 6 Age —13 witnes] 6 witness justify'd] 6 justifi'd —14 Position.] 4, 5 position. 6 position, Moses.] 6 Moses, —15 morall] 6 moral —16 Fagius;] 4, 5, 6 Fagius, —17 therfore] 1, 4, 5, 6 therefore —18 strictnes] 6 strictness literall] 6 literal —20 houshold] 4, 5, 6 houshold —21 burdening] 1 burdning 6 burthening —22 then] 6 than —23 down;] 4, 5, 6 down,

## PAGE 388

—1 unfitnes] 6 unfitness —2 unchangeable] 1 unchangeable hindring] 6 hindring, —3 conjugall] 6 conjugal society,] 6 society —4 then] 6 than naturall] 6 natural —5 children] 6 Children

—6 *mutuall*] 6 *mutual* —7-p. 390, l. 7 This . . . instituted.]  
 NOT IN 1. —8 *passee*] 6 *pass* —10 *uncleanesse*] 6 *uncleanness*  
 —11 *and send*] 4, 5, & *send* &c] 6 &c —13 *beleef*] 6 *belief*  
 —14 *therefore*] 4, 5, 6 *therefore* —15 *he,*] 4, 5 *he permitted*  
 4, 5 *permitted* —16 *human weaknes*] 6 *humane weakness* —17  
*seperats*] 4, 5 *seperats* 6 *seperates* —20 *weaknes*] 6 *weakness*  
 —21 *marries*] 4, 5 *maries divorc't,*] 4, 5, 6 *divorc't* —23 *untill*] 6 *until*  
 —24 *doe*] 6 *do twofold*] 6 *two-fold* —25 *Lawgiver*] 6 *Law-giver*  
 —26 *somthing*] 4, 5, 6 *something* —28 *evill*] 6 *evil*

## PAGE 389

—5 *foule*] 6 *foul* —8 *perfet*] 4, 5, 6 *perfect* —9 *exposi-*  
*tors.*] 2, 5 *expositors* —11 *uncleanesse;*] 6 *uncleanness, naked-*  
*nes*] 6 *nakedness* —12 *reall nakednes*] 6 *real nakedness* —13  
*mind,*] 6 *mind body.*] 2, 3 *body,* —14 *nakednes*] 6 *nakedness*  
 —14, 16 *unfitnes*] 6 *unfitness* —15 *peacefull*] 6 *peaceful*  
*maried*] 4, 5, 6 *married* —16 *then*] 6 *than defectiveness*] 6 *defectiveness*  
 —17 *unconjugall*] 4, 5 *unconjugall* —17, 21 *therefore*] 4, 5, 6 *therefore*  
 —18 *expres't*] 6 *express* —19 *equalest sense*] 4, 5, 6 *equallest sence* —20 *moral*] 4, 5 *morall*  
 —23 *goodnes*] 4, 5 *goodnesse* 6 *goodness* —25 *thraldome,*] 6 *thraldome;* *lesse*] 6 *less* —27 *releef*] 4, 5, 6 *relief* —28  
*marriage*] 4, 5, 6 *marriage inseparable*] 4, 5, 6 *unseperable untill*] 6 *until*

## PAGE 390

—1 *discours't*] 6 *discours'd* —3 *stroking*] 6 *stroaking teares*] 6 *tears*  
 —7 *selfe*] 6 *self* —9 *cov'nant*] 6 *cov'nt* —10 *self,*] 4, 5, 6 *self*  
 —11 *sense*] 4, 5, 6 *sence equity*] 1 *reason and equity reclaim's*] 1 *reclaimes*  
 —12 *solemne*] 1 *solemn* —14 *princi-* *pall*] 6 *principal* —15 *party*] 6 *Party* —16 *blameles*] 4, 5, 6 *blameless*  
 —17 *own*] 4, 5 *owne perpetuall*] 6 *perpetual* —18 *charity*] 6 *Charity doe*] 6 *do*  
 —20 *expresse*] 6 *express* —21 *ordinance*] 6 *Ordinance his*] 6 *this chiefe*] 6 *chief*  
 —22 *woman*] 6 *Woman joynd*] 4, 5, 6 *joyn'd* —23 *informe*] 6 *inform*  
 —24 *mariage*] 1 *mariage,* 4, 5 *marriage* 6 *marriage, marriage;*] 1 *mariage;* 4, 5 *marriage:* 6 *marriage; unlesse*] 6 *unless*

## PAGE 391

—1 *alone;*] 6 *alone,* —2 *lesse*] 6 *less* —3, 16, 21 *then*] 6 *than*  
 —5 *mariage;*] 1 *mariage;* 4, 5 *marriage:* 6 *marriage;* —6 *carvall*] 6 *carnal knowledge*] 1, 6 *knowledg lonelines*] 1

lonelinesse 4, 5, 6 loneliness 7-8 To . . . wisht.] NOT IN 1.  
 —7 this] 6 this, —11 marriage] 1 mariage whenas] 4, 5, 6  
 when as —12, 14, 16 mind] 1 minde —14 married] 6 married  
 is,] 4, 5 is; —18 corporall] 6 corporal soon] 4, 5 soone  
 —19 solitarines] 6 solitariness —20 order'd] 1 orderd mariage]  
 6 marriage —22 remotenes] 6 remoteness —24 himselfe]  
 1 himselfe, 6 himself, seek] 4, 5 seeke continuall] 6 continual  
 —27 daily] 4, 5 dayly pain] 1, 4, 5 paine losse] 6 loss, som]  
 1, 4, 5, 6 some degree] 6 degree, —28 Reprobats] 1, 6 Repro-  
 bates feel] 4, 5 feele therfore] 1, 4, 5, 6 therefore

## PAGE 392

—1 evill] 6 evil —2 ordinance] 6 Ordinance —3 lesse  
 evill] 6 less evil himselfe] 6 himself —4 solitarines] 4, 5, 6  
 solitariness avoid] 1 avoyd —6 increase] 1 encrease God-  
 forbidd'n] 4, 5, 6 God forbidd'n lonelines] 6 loneliness, —7  
 generall] 6 general —8 mind] 1 minde —9 morall] 6 moral  
 —10 Common-wealth] 6 Common wealth —11 publick] 4, 5  
 publicke —13 marriage] 6 marriage mariage] 6 marriage,  
 —15 doe] 6 do —16 claiming] 4, 5 claimyng then] 6 than  
 —18 bed,] 6 bed; —19 mis-fortune;] 1 mis-fortune, 6 mis-  
 fortune: els] 6 else usefull] 6 useful wast] 6 waste away,]  
 1 away —21-22 Against . . . exhibited.] NOT IN 1. —21 evils]  
 6 evils —24 *mariage*] 6 *marriage* —25 *and*] 4, 5 & *greev-*  
*ances*] 6 *grievances* *objection*] 6 *Objection* *that*] 6 *That* —26  
*answered*] 4, 5 *answerd*

## PAGE 393

—1 vain] 4, 5 vaine therfore] 1, 4, 5, 6 therefore —2 Law]  
 6 Law, carefull] 6 careful —3 carnall] 6 carnal —5 mind]  
 1 minde —6 vessell] 6 vessel —7 to] 4, 5, 6 on tak'n]  
 4, 5, 6 taken trust] 6 trust, —8 caution,] 6 caution; mind]  
 1 minde 6 mind, —9 far] 4, 5 farre pretious] 1, 6 precious  
 —9, 22 then] 6 than —11 performe] 6 perform marriage]  
 1 marriage —12 cheerfull] 6 cheerful —13 enough] 4, 5, 6  
 enough how ever] 4, 5, 6 however and] 1 & —14 serve,]  
 1 serve eternall] 6 eternal —15 him.] 6 him wisdom]  
 4, 5 wisdom —16 waighing] 6 weighing own] 4, 5 owne  
 think] 4, 5 thinke —17 lonelines] 6 loneliness, —18 free'd]  
 6 freed aswell] 6 as well sensuall] 6 sensual —19 Tis] 6 'Tis  
*we*] 1 *wee* —20 *beasts*] 6 *beasts*, —21 *understanding*;] 1  
*understanding*: —22 satisfy'd] 6 satisfi'd —24 *mariage*] 6 *marriage*  
 is] 4, 5, 6 was —25 triall] 6 trial —26 appeare] 6 appear

## PAGE 394

—1 tis] 6 'tis —2 firme] 6 firm —4 married] 6 married  
 —5 irrationall] 6 irrational —6, 11 mariage] 6 marriage —7  
 soule] 6 soul —8 doctrine] 6 Doctrine selfe] 1, 6 self  
 —9, 12, 24 then] 6 than —10 mind] 1 minde —11 chan-  
 nell] 6 channel —13 souls] 4, 5 soules lawfull] 6 lawful  
 onely] 4, 5, 6 one onely —15 again] 4, 5 againe —16 warinesse]  
 6 wariness befall] 6 befall —17 choice,] 1 choice: and we have  
 plenty of examples.] NOT IN 1. —18 The] 1 the sobrest]  
 1 soberest least] 1 lest —19 knowes] 1, 6 knows bashfull]  
 6 bashful —20 mutenes] 4, 5, 6 muteness unlivelines] 4, 5  
 unliveliness 6 unliveliness —21 and] 1 & naturall] 6 natural  
 —22 accesse] 6 access —24 indisposition] 4, 5, 6 disposition  
 usuall] 6 usual —25 increases] 1 encreases —28 too] 4, 5, 6  
 so nuptiall] 6 nuptial

## PAGE 395

—1 therefore] 1 therfore —2 happines,] 4, 5 happinesse,  
 6 happiness. charitable] 4, 5 charritable —4 succesfull] 6  
 successful —7 modesty] 1 modestie —8 sociall] 6 social that]  
 4, 5, 6 the veile] 6 vail —10 mind] 1 minde inaccessible]  
 4, 5 inaccessible —11 superior] 6 superiour —12 uselesse]  
 6 useless liveles] 4, 5 livelesse 6 liveless —13 help] 4, 5 helpe  
 consort] 6 Consort —14 lesse] 6 less pain] 1 paine then]  
 6 than —TITLE CHAP. IIII] 6 CHAP. IV —16 Second]  
 6 second —16, 18 mariage] 6 marriage —18 rationally] 6  
 rational —19 beginning] 6 beginning, —20 conjugall] 6  
 conjugal —21 helpfulness] 4, 5, 6 helpfulness —22 violent  
 and cruell] 4, 5 violent cruell 6 violent cruel —24 nature] 6  
 Nature —25 mariage] 6 marriage joynd] 1, 4, 5, 6 joyn'd

## PAGE 396

—1 compulsion,] 1 compulsion —2 evils] 6 evils, is,] 1 is  
 —4 dispensing] 1, 4, 5, 6 dispensing and] 1 & —5 politician]  
 6 Politician —6 think] 4, 5 thinke disworship,] 6 disworship  
 —7 countenance;] 6 countenance: this] 6 that —8 passe]  
 6 pass —9 Gospell] 4, 5 Gospell —10 then] 6 than —11  
 referre] 6 refer charitie] 6 Charity —12 wayes] 6 ways  
 violated. Which] 6 violated; which —13 addresse] 6 address  
 First] 6 First, St.] 6 S. —14 then] 6 than burn] 1 burne  
 Marriage] 6 Marriage therfore] 1, 4, 5, 6 therefore —15  
 trouble:] 6 trouble; —16 mean] 4, 5 meane meer] 4, 5 meere  
 carnall] 6 carnal —17 desire;] 6 desire, —18 cattell] 6



Cattle —20 incontinence] 6 Incontinence —21 burn] 4, 5  
burne in;] 6 in, —22 solitarines] 4, 5, 6 solitariness —23  
soule] 6 soul cheerfull] 6 chearful —24 wedlock.] 6 Wedlock:  
24, 26 needfull] 6 needful —25 himselfe] 1, 6 himself —27  
help] 4, 5 helpe —28 misses] 6 misses,

PAGE 397

—1 spiritles] 4, 5 spiritlesse 6 spiritless remains] 4, 5 remains  
—1, 23, 25 then] 6 than —2 lesse] 6 less —4 faultles]  
6 faultless —5 venom] 6 venome —6 labour,] 1 labour  
—7 diet] 6 diet, —8 enough] 1 anough joyning] 2, 3, 4, 5 joying  
1, 6 joyning —9 selfe] 1, 6 self conjugall] 6 conjugal soul]  
4, 5 soule —10 call'd] 6 called *then*] 6 *than* —11 spouse]  
1 Spouse —12 *floods*] 1 *floods* rationall] 6 rational —13,  
24, 25 mariage] 6 marriage —14 subdu'd,] 6 subdu'd; which]  
2, 3 which —15 most] NOT IN 1. —16 unsutable] 1 most  
unsutable —17 paradise] 1 Paradise 6 Paradice —18 ardent,]  
4, 5, 6 ardent —20 anough] 6 enough soule] 1, 6 soul  
—21 obtained] 1 obtain'd —22 forbid'n] 6 forbidden —24  
human] 4, 5, 6 humane —25 satisfie] 1 satisfy els] 6 else  
dissolv'd] 6 dissolv'd —26 honorable] 4, 5, 6 honourable meet]  
1 meer —27 of] 4, 5, 6 OMIT. two:] 1 two; —28 couples,]  
1 couples

PAGE 398

—1 maried] 6 married ingenuous] 4, 5, 6 ingenious —2 &]  
4, 5, 6 and mariage] 6 marriage —3 mutual] 4, 5 mutuall  
—4, 28 then] 6 than joyfully] 1 jollily —5 festival] 1 festivall  
6 Festival discours] 4, 5, 6 discourse —6 brings] 2, 3 bings  
—7 Prophetesse] 6 Prophetess sonne] 1 Sonne —8 garden]  
6 Garden —9 us,] 1 us; son] 1 Son —10 *Lonelines*]  
6 *Loneliness* Paradise] 4, 5, 6 Paradice —10, 17 and] 1 &  
helpfull] 6 helpful —12 burning] 1 burnining mention'd]  
6 mentioned —13 St.] 1 *St.* mariage] 1, 6 marriage —14  
Flesh] 1 flesh mutuall] 1 naturall 6 mutual curbs] 1 curbes  
—15 man.] 1 man therfore] 4, 5, 6 therefore originall] 6  
original —16 sinles] 6 sinless *Lonelines*] 6 *Loneliness* soul]  
4, 5 soule selfe] 1, 6 self —17 down] 4, 5 downe —18  
marriage] 1 mariage —19 unmarried] 1 unmarried —20 for-  
mall] 6 formal wedlock,] 4, 5 wedlock 6 Wedlock, burnes]  
6 burns —21 S.] 1 St. —22 naturall] 6 natural —24  
dismissee] 6 dismiss recompence;] 1 recompence, —25 still,]  
6 still heap up] 1 heap —26 this] 1 that dismission now

defended took beginning:] 1 dismission, *Deut* 24.1. took beginning;  
of which anon: took] 4, 5 tooke —27 therfore] 4, 5, 6 therefore  
—28 human] 1, 4, 5, 6 humane mariage] 4, 5, 6 marriage

## PAGE 399

—1 cheerfull] 1 cherfull 4, 5 cheerefull 6 cheerful covnant]  
4, 5, 6 cov'nant —2 belov'd] 6 belov'd, &] 4, 5, 6 and  
retain'd,] 4, 5, 6 retain'd —3 say] 6 say, therfore] 4, 5  
therefore —4 married] 4, 5, 6 married life,] 4, 5, 6 life stain]  
4, 5 stayn —5 which] 2, 3 whch equall] 6 equal —8 lone-  
liness] 1 lonelines 6 loneliness seek] 4, 5 seeke help] 4, 5 helpe  
—10 himselfe] 1, 6 himself 11 *Third Reason*] 4, 5, 6 *third*  
*reason* —12 hath] 4, 5, 6 *has* remediles] 6 *remediless* —15  
feard] 1 feard —16 deafe] 6 deaf —19 unlesse] 6 unless  
—20 heroically] 4, 5 heroycally . —22 sins] 1 sins,

## PAGE 400

—1 unblamably,] 4, 5, 6 unblamably layd] 6 laid —2 en-  
joyment] 6 enjoyments mariage] 4, 5, 6 marriage —3 furdere-  
ance] 6 furtherance therein] 1 herein —4 himselfe] 6 himself  
—6 earth] 6 Earth fleam] 4, 5 fleame 6 Fleam copartner]  
6 Copartner —7 society] 1, 6 society, withall] 6 withal  
—9 dispair] 4, 5 dispaire 6 despair mutin] 6 mutine —10  
divine providence:] 6 Divine Providence; doubtles] 6 doubtless  
—11 melancholy] 4, 5, 6 melancholly despair] 4, 5 despaire  
—13 extreme] 4, 5 extreame 6 extream —14 therfore] 1, 4, 5,  
6 therefore human] 6 humane —15 losse] 6 loss physick]  
6 Physick —16 endanger] 4, 5, 6 indanger —17 *Fourth*  
*Love*] 6 *love* —18 *Peace*] 6 *peace* —18, 20 *then*  
*than* —19 *marriage*] 6 *marriage* —20 *needfull*] 6 *needful*  
—21 *Marriage*] 6 *Marriage* cov'nant] 1 covnant 6 Cov'nant,  
beeing] 6 being —22 wherof] 1, 4, 5, 6 whereof consists,]  
6 consists counterfet] 1, 6 counterfeit —23 unfained] 6 un-  
feigned —24 peace.] 6 peace: —24-p. 402, l. 12 And of . . .  
dissembl'd.] NOT IN 1. matrimoniall] 4, 5 matrimonial 6 Matri-  
monial love] 6 love, —25 parabl'd,] 6 parabl'd;

## PAGE 401

—1 Love] 6 love —2 *Anteros*:] 6 *Anteros*; —3 fals]  
6 falls faining Desires] 6 feigning desires —4 his likenes.]  
4, 5 her likenes. 6 her likeness: —5 Love,] 4, 5, 6 Love —8  
region] 6 Region sphere] 6 Sphere —9 simplicity,] 6 simplicity  
—11 suborned striplings] 6 suborned Striplings —12 Sons,]  
6 Sons; suttly] 6 subtly keep] 4, 5 keepe —14 Towr] 4, 5, 6

Tower —15 earth] 6 Earth rayes] 6 rays —16 eyesight]  
 6 eye-sight impostures] 6 Impostures —17 disguises] 6 disguises  
 —18 genuin] 6 genuine —19 personated] 4, 5 personall 6 per-  
 sonal mate] 6 Mate —21 breades] 6 Breads knots] 4, 5, 6  
 knots, —22 original] 4, 5 originall frie] 6 fiery Fate] 6 fate  
 —23 out] 6 out, undeifi'd,] 4, 5, 6 undeifi'd —24 force:]  
 6 force, —26 &] 6 and author] 6 Author

## PAGE 402

—1 ones,] 4, 5 ones; —3 esteemd] 4, 5, 6 esteemed arks] 6  
 Arks —4 human] 6 humane upward] 6 upwards —5 glassy Sea]  
 2, 3, 4, 5 globy sea CORRECTED IN ERRATA. 6 globy Sea wheron]  
 4, 5, 6 whereon —6, 21 mariage] 6 marriage —7 subsist,]  
 4, 5, 6 subsist unlesse] 6 unless it] 4, 5 in —8 wedlock]  
 6 Wedlock —9 matrimony;] 6 Matrimony, undelightfull] 6  
 undelightful —10 farre] 6 far —11 duties,] 4, 5, 6 duties  
 —12 If *Salomons* advice be not over frolick,] 1 Thence saith *Salomon*  
 in *Ecclesiastes*, *Salomons*] 6 *Solomons* —13 *Live joyfully*, saith  
 he,] 1 *Live joyfully* 4, 5, *Love joyfully*, saith he, —14 *dayes*]  
 6 *days* —15 finde] 1, 6 find obey] 1 obay —16 do] 1 doe  
 —18 joyn;] 1 joyne, 6 joyn, —19 blisfull] 6 blissfull  
 —20 heark'n] 4, 5, 6 hearken St.] 6 S. —22 enough] 1 anough  
 generall,] 1 generall 6 general, —23 *peace*] 6 *peace*, —24  
 then] 6 than —25 *divorce*;] 6 *divorce*, is,] 4, 5 is love:]  
 1 love, or delight. 6 love. —26-p. 403, l. 13 hence . . . separated.]  
 NOT IN 1. hence] 6 Hence Rabbins] 6 *Rabbins* —27 *Mai-*  
*monides*] 6 *Maimonides*,

## PAGE 403

—1 us] 4, 5, 6 us, —2 *mariage*] 6 *marriage* —3 Jewes]  
 4, 5, 6 Jews aswell] 6 as well —4 wholsom] 6 wholesome  
 —5 houshold] 4, 5 houshold them;] 6 them, —6 deny'd]  
 6 deni'd perversnes] 6 perverseness —7 peacemaking] 4, 5, 6  
 peace-making then] 6 than Gospel] 4, 5 Gospell —9 it:]  
 6 it;—10 mill] 6 Mill servil] 6 servile —11, 15, 26 mariage,]  
 6 marriage oft times] 6 oft-times —12 yokefellow] 6 yoke-  
 fellow —13 therfore] 1, 4, 5, 6 therefore —16 being] 1  
 beeing therby] 1, 4, 5, 6 thereby return] 4, 5 returne —17  
 clear] 4, 5 cleare countnance] 4, 5, 6 countenance —18, 20  
 lesse] 6 less —19 Divorce] 1 divorce —20 liberall] 6 liberal  
 breach] 2, 3 breach —21 wedlock] 6 Wedlock —22 soile]  
 6 soil —23 sadnes] 4, 5 sadnesse 6 sadness perpetuall] 6 per-  
 petual —24 mariage,] 1, 6 marriage keeps] 4, 5 keeps cov'-

nant] 1 covenant —25 whosoever] 6 whatsoever —27 least]  
 1 lest only] 1, 4, 5, 6 only fulfilling] 1, 6 fulfilling —28  
 Commandment] 4, 5, 6 Commandment

## PAGE 404

—1 Fifth] 4, 5 Fifth 6 fifth —9 himself] 1, 4, 5 himselfe  
 —10 and] 1 & —11 cheerfulness] 1 cheerfulness 4, 5 cheerfulness  
 6 cheerfulness in] 4, 5 is —13 tears] 1, 4, 5 teares  
 bosome] 1 bosom crushing] 1 which grinds —14 foundation]  
 1 foundations nature,] 4, 5 nature —15 dissimulation] 4, 5, 6  
 a dissimulation —16 soule] 1, 6 soul perpetuall] 6 perpetual  
 ceaseles] 4, 5 ceaselesse 6 ceaseless doubtles] 4, 5 doubtlesse 6  
 doubtless —18 unpreparednesse] 6 unpreparedness —19  
 wherein] 1, 4, 5, 6 wherein therefore] 6 therefore —20 Christi-  
 anity] 1 Christianly break] 4, 5 breake —21 broken] 1 brok'n  
 —21, 23 then] 6 than —22 Altar] 6 altar continuall teares]  
 6 continual tears —23 more,] 6 more; —25 weight] 1 waight  
 griefe] 1, 6, grief —26 childr'n] 1 childer'n 6 children

## PAGE 405

—1 divorce] 6 divorce, —2 seed,] 4, 5 seed it hinder'd . . .  
 so, and] NOT IN 1. so,] 6 so; —3 think] 4, 5 thinke —3, 8  
 then] 6 than off-spring] 1 offspring 6 off spring —4 wedlock]  
 6 Wedlock bestiall] 6 bestial necessitie] 6 necessity, —5  
 parents] 6 Parents —6 children] 1 childern 6 Children  
 —8 bastards;] 6 Bastards, —9 mind] 1 minde God.] 6 God:  
 —10 especially] 6 especially, —12 onely] 6 only bitternes] 6  
 bitterness and] 4, 5 & canker] 6 Canker —13 devotion] 6  
 Devotion vitious] 6 vicious carelesnes;] 4, 5 carelesnesse; 6 care-  
 lesness, —14 himselfe] 1, 4, 5, 6 himself his,] 1 his deceitfull]  
 6 deceitful —15 betrai'd] 6 betray'd ordinance] 6 Ordinance  
 —16 heavines] 6 heaviness and] 1 & —17 erroneously] 6 er-  
 roniously —18 iniquitie] 6 iniquity preferres] 6 prefers  
 —19 cheerfull] 1 cherfull 6 chearful —20 marriage] 1 mar-  
 iage —21 generall] 6 general maximes] 1 maxims —22  
 parallell] 1 paralel 6 parallel —23 Idolatresse] 6 Idolatress  
 she] 4, 5, 6 he —25 her enticing] 1 inticing 4, 5, 6 her inticing  
 —26 sorcery] 6 Sorcery —27 unhelpfull] 1, 6 unhelpful so-  
 ciety;] 1 society, —28 last] 6 last, despair] 6 despair,

## PAGE 406

—1 Atheisme;] 1 Atheism: 6 Atheism; separating] 1, 6 sepa-  
 rating, —2 faith] 6 Faith —4 one] 6 one, wife] 6 Wife  
 therefore] 1, 6 therefore —6 unlesse] 6 unless —6, 23

mariage] 4, 5 marriage 6 Marriage charity] 1 charitie 6 Charity  
 —7 doctrine] 6 Doctrine devils] 4, 5 divels 6 Devils, lesse]  
 6 less then] 6 than —9 idolatrous] 6 Idolatrous —11  
*Corinth*] 6 Corinth *erroneous exposition*] 6 *erronious Exposition*  
 —12 *expositors*] 6 *Expositors morall*] 6 *moral* —13 *law*] 4, 5,  
 6 *Law* —14 way] 6 way, —15 ere] 6 e're treatise] 6  
 Treatise loath] 6 loth —16 resolve] 1 resolv —17 idola-  
 trous] 1, 6 Idolatrous —18 heretick] 6 Heretick wherof] 1, 4,  
 5, 6 whereof —19 know] 6 know, —20 unbelieving] 6 un-  
 believing Gentile] 6 *Gensile* first] 6 First —21 Nations,]  
 1 Nations *Canaanites*] 6 *Canaanites*, —24 *Deut. 7. 3. 6.*] 1  
*Deut. 7. 3. 6.* —25 chap.] 4, 5, 6 Chap.

## PAGE 407

—2 unbeliever] 6 unbeliever were] 1 wer —4, 6, 9, 26 S.]  
 1 St. —5 Evangelicall] 6 Evangelical vision] 6 Vision —6  
 wherein] 1, 4, 5, 6 wherein being] 1 beeing —7 creatures]  
 1 creature 6 Creatures sanctified] 1 sanctifi'd —8 Christian]  
 1 christian general] 1, 4, 5 generall —9 cov'nant] 1 covnant  
 6 Cov'nant grace] 6 Grace —10 *unbelieving wife*] 6 *unbeliev-  
 ing Wife sanctify'd*] 6 *sanctifi'd husband*] 6 *Husband* —11  
 lawfull] 6 lawful use;] 6 use, —12 fear] 6 fear, unbelief]  
 4, 5 unbeleef —13 stil] 4, 5, 6 still —16 divine warrant]  
 6 Divine Warrant —17 forgoe] 4, 5, 6 forgo wives] 6 Wives  
 —18 morall] 4, 5, 6 moral perpetuall] 6 perpetual faith] 6 Faith  
 —19 evasion.] 6 evasion; Therefore] 1 Therefore 6 therefore  
 Apostle] 6 Apostle, *Cor.*] 6 Cor. —20 *infidels*] 1, 6 *Infidels*  
 mariage] 4, 5 marriage 6 Marriage —21 legall] 6 legal  
 —22 don] 6 done spirituall] 1, 6 spiritual —23 shun'd] 1  
 shunn'd —24 alwayes] 6 always —26 mariage.] 4, 5 mar-  
 riage. 6 Marriage: —27 *righteousnesse*] 6 *righteousness un-  
 righteousness*] 6 *unrighteousness* —28 *darknes*] 1 *darknesse*  
 6 *darkness*

## PAGE 408

—1 *Belial*] 1 *Beliall beleeveth*] 6 *believeth* —2 *infidel*]  
 1 *Infidell* 6 *Infidel* one] 1, 6 one, —3 *Isaiah,*] 6 *Isaiah;*  
*Wherefore*] 1 *Wherfore* —4 *separate*] 6 *separate*, —7 wheron]  
 1, 6 whereon necessity] 1 necessitie divorcing.] 6 divorcing  
 —8—p. 411, l. 7 Neither . . . confusion.] NOT IN 1. —9, 12 gen-  
 erall] 6 general so direct as this;] 6 so direct; —11 author]  
 6 Author —12 faithfull] 6 faithful unfaithfull] 6 unfaithful  
 —13 Gospel] 4, 5, 6 Gospel side] 6 side, —17 chapter] 6

Chapter, afterwards] 6 afterwards, —18 civill] 6 civil natural]  
 4, 5 naturall —20 religion] 6 Religion heare] 4, 5, 6 hear  
 father] 6 Father, —21 mother] 6 Mother wife] 6 Wife also]  
 6 also, —23 onely] 4, 5, 6 only —25 don] 6 done —26  
 tendernes] 6 tenderness —28 constancie] 6 constancy

## PAGE 409

—1 *Job*] 6 *Job*, —2 desperat] 4, 5, 6 desperate *Moses*] 6  
*Moses*, —3 meekest] 6 meekest, —5 elbow] 6 Elbow  
 —7 hopeles] 6 hopeless —8 progresse] 6 progress equall] 6  
 equal —9 justice] 6 Justice place,] 6 place —10 lesse]  
 6 less then] 6 than totall] 6 total finall] 6 final —11 ad-  
 herent;] 6 Adherent, —12 together:] 6 together; —13 wife]  
 6 Wife son] 6 Son —15 *Michal*] 4, 5, 6 *Michael* —16  
 Therefore] 4, 5 Therefore —18 remedy] 4, 5 remedie —19  
 matrimony] 6 Matrimony —20 dutie] 6 duty —22 flie]  
 6 fly farre] 6 far heaven] 6 Heaven hell] 6 Hell —24 true]  
 6 true, father] 6 Father —25 brother] 6 Brother —26 doe]  
 4, 5, 6 do —27 perpetuall] 6 perpetual

## PAGE 410

—5 *Salomon*] 4, 5, 6 *Solomon* —7 Gospell] 4, 5, 6 Gospel  
 —9 corrivall] 6 corrival —11, 24 morall] 6 moral —15, 17,  
 18 &] 4, 5, 6 and —21 demurre] 4, 5, 6 demur —23 then]  
 6 than —24 beleeve] 6 believe —26 retreat,] 6 retreat and]  
 4, 5 & —27 civill] 6 civil —28 generall] 4, 5, 6 general

## PAGE 411

—1 Deut.] 4, 5 Deut, —4 *Shouldst*] 6 *Shouldest* doubtlesse]  
 2, 3 doublesse 4, 5 doubtlesse 6 doubtless —8 beleever] 6 be-  
 liever —9 heretick,] 1 heretick unlesse] 6 unless —10 be-  
 leever] 6 believers —12 idolater] 6 idolater, seducing] 6  
 seducing, —13 Deut. 13. 6. 9] 1, 4, 5 Deut. 13. 6. 9. 6 Deut.  
 13. 6. 9. mariage] 6 marriage therfore] 1, 6 therefore —14  
 himselfe] 1, 4, 5, 6 himself dis-joyns:] 1 dis-joyns; 6 disjoyns:  
 morall] 6 moral —15 keeping,] 1 keeping —16 enforce]  
 6 inforce —17 reformers] 6 Reformers —21 lawfull] 4, 5, 6  
 lawfull —22 appeare] 1, 4, 5, 6 appear marriage] 1 mariage  
 hatefull] 6 hateful —23 therfore] 1, 6 therfore patern] 1 pat-  
 tern warrant] 6 Warrant —24 had;] 6 had, Neither] 1  
 neither —25 wherefore] 1, 4, 5 wherefore —26 joyns,] 6  
 joyns that,] 6 that —27 man] 6 men —28 separate. But]  
 1 separate: but 6 separate: But

## PAGE 412

—1 don] 6 done don,] 1 don 6 done, avails] 1 availles  
 crotchet] 1 crochet 6 Crotchet —2, 11 Law] 1 law it,] 6 it  
 —3 tis] 6 'tis —4 onely] 6 only —5 S.] 1 St. seems]  
 1, 4, 5, 6 seems —6 Infidell] 6 Infidel —7 thus;] 6 thus,  
 —9 plain:] 6 plain; mariage] 6 marriage —10 Infidel] 4, 5  
 Infidell —11 morall] 6 moral —12 unbelleeve] 6 unbeliever  
 —13 wedlock] 6 Wedlock —14 faith:] 6 faith; therefore] 1, 6  
 therefore advises] 1 advices forbear] 1, 4, 5, 6 forbear —15  
 till] 4, 5 til been] 1 bin —16 cautions;] 6 cautions, —18  
 beleev'd] 6 believ'd els] 6 else —19 counsell] 6 counsel  
 —21, 24 S.] 1 St. we] 1 wee —22 forewarn'd] 4, 5 forewarnd  
 disclaim'd;] 6 disclaim'd, which,] 6 which —24 out-face] 6 outface  
 —26 judgement] 6 judgment liberty] 1 libertie 6 liberty,  
 —27 doe] 4, 5, 6 do mariage] 6 marriage

## PAGE 413

—2 judgement] 6 judgment —5 lesse inspir'd] 6 less inspir'd,  
 —5, 10, 11, S.] 1 St. —7 expresse] 6 express himselfe] 1, 4,  
 5, 6 himself —8 Christian] 1 christian prudence] 6 prudence,  
 —10 read] 6 read, *Austine*] 1, 6 *Austin Blasphemy*] 1 Blasphemy,  
 4, 5 *blasphemy* 6 *Blasphemy*, —11 heer] 6 here indifferent. But] 1  
 indifferent: but —13 herein] 1 heerin —14 plainly,] 1 plainly  
 —17 unbelleeving] 6 unbelieving joyne] 1, 4, 5, 6 joyn —18  
 lesse] 6 less then] 6 than mutuall] 6 mutual —19 surmise]  
 6 surmize Judaicall] 6 Judaical —20 uncleannes] 6 uncleanness  
 —21 infidell] 1 Infidell 6 Infidel —22 mutual] 1, 4, 5 mutuall  
 complacencie] 1, 6 complacency —23 seducement;] 6 seduce-  
 ment, —24 offence:] 1 offence, therefore] 1 therfore —26  
 beleever] 6 believer —27 heerby] 4, 5, 6 hereby doubtles]  
 6 doubtless —28 Christian] 1 christian

## PAGE 414

—1 pagan] 6 Pagan or] 4, 5, 6 and vex] 1 vexe —2 bur-  
 dens,] 1 burdens —3 If] 1 if therefore] 1, 6 therefore soul,]  
 1, 6 soul —4 beleever] 6 believer —5 endlesse] 1 endless  
 6 endless —6 spirit;] 6 spirit, —7 then] 6 than —8  
 heretick.] 1 heretick; 6 Heretick. —8—19 The counsell...  
 soever] NOT IN 1. counsell] 6 counsel —9 moral] 4, 5 morall  
 —10 feare] 4, 5, 6 fear separate] 4, 5 seperate —11 misbe-  
 leever] 6 misbeliever obdurat] 4, 5, 6 obdurate —12 wooll]  
 6 Wooll —13 hope:] 6 hope; —15 himselfe] 4, 5, 6 himself  
 —16 heare] 4, 5, 6 hear —17 Gospell.] 4, 5, 6 Gospel, *pearls*]

6 *Pearls swine*] 6 *Swine* —18 *heathen*] 6 *Heathen* —19  
 enough] 6 enough —20 And this also that follows,] 1 for this also  
 follows,] 6 follows precept,] 4, 5 precept. 6 Precept. —21  
*every*] 2, 3 *every wherein*] 1, 6 *wherein call'd*] 6 *call'd, therein*] 1, 4, 5, 6 *therein abide*] 2, 3 *abide God,*] 2, 3, 4, 5 God. v. 24]  
 1 v. 24 —22 inferior] 6 inferiour —24 Christianity] 1 christi-  
 anitie never too oft remembred,] NOT IN 1. —25 command] 6  
 command, —26 looke] 1, 4, 5, 6 look understood,] 1 understood  
 —27 morall religion] 6 moral Religion —28 doe] 4, 5, 6 do  
 morall] 6 moral

## PAGE 415

—1 Gospell] 1, 4, 5, 6 Gospel civill] 6 civil —2 masters]  
 6 Masters —3 *adultery*] 6 *Adultery matrimony*] 6 *Matrimony*  
 —5 Adultery] 2, 3 Adultery 1 adultery —6 mariage] 6 Mar-  
 riage —8 matrimony] 6 Matrimony chiefe] 1, 4, 5, 6 chief  
 thereof] 1 therof —9 Godly] 6 godly —9, 25 civill] 6 civil  
 mariage-bed] 6 Marriage-bed —11 deny,] 6 deny, —15,  
 18, 22 mariage] 6 marriage grosse] 6 gross —16 farre] 4, 5, 6  
 far countnance] 4, 5, 6 countenance —17 philosophy] 6 Philos-  
 ophy civill nature] 6 civil Nature —18 cheerfull] 1 cherfull  
 6 chearful —19 purest,] 1 purest —22 necessary:] 6 neces-  
 sary; —24 therein] 6 therein —25 corporall] 6 corporal  
 —26 only] 4, 5 onely perverse] 1 pervers

## PAGE 416

—1 selfe] 1, 4, 5, 6 self —2 Canon] 1 canon —4 shewn]  
 1 shewn, numnesse] 6 numness —5 minde] 4, 5, 6 mind  
 already] 6 already, —6 therof] 6 thereof expresse] 6 express  
 institution] 6 Institution —7, 17 mariage] 6 Marriage intellec-  
 tuall] 6 intellectual —9 bond] 6 Bond wedlock,] 3 wedlock  
 6 Wedlock, and] 4, 5 & bestial] 4, 5 bestiall 6 bestial —10  
 frugal] 4, 5 frugall diet] 6 Diet, mariage] 6 Marriage, —11  
 Next] 6 Next, transgresse] 6 transgress conjugall bed] 6 Conjugal  
 Bed —12 soule] 4, 5, 6 soul —13 mis't. Or els] 6 mist; or  
 else repining] 6 repining, —14 Atheism,] 6 Atheism, —16  
 shew'n] 1 shew'd 6 shewn unties] 6 untyes —17 and] 1 &  
 —18 unti'd] 6 unty'd aimes] 6 aims —19 formalitie] 6 formal-  
 ity —20 compell] 1, 4, 5 compell married] 6 married  
 —21 *Sixth*] 6 *sixth* —22 *natural*] 4, 5 *naturall causes*] 6 *cases*  
 —23 *sixt*] 6 *sixth prohibition*] 6 Prohibition respectlesse] 1 re-  
 spectles 6 respectless —24 human] 4, 5, 6 humane nature]  
 1 nature, 6 Nature as it is of religion,] NOT IN 1. —25 ther-



fore] 4, 5, 6 therefore teaches] 6 teaches, unlawfull mariage]  
6 unlawfull marriage —26 divorce't.] 6 divorce't:

## PAGE 417

—1 oft-times] 1 oft-times —2 matrimony] 6 Matrimony find]  
1 finde powerfull] 1, 4, 5 powerfull —3 recoile] 6 recoil  
—3, 18 nature] 6 Nature side] 6 side, —4 mutuall] 6 mutual  
—5 married] 6 married —7 sowe] 6 sow thy vineyard] 6 the  
Vineyard —9 Oxe] 4, 5 Ox Asse together,] 6 Ass together  
—10 St.] 4, 5, 6 S. Asses] 4, 5 asses —11 Oxen;] 1, 6 Oxen,  
4, 5 oxen, —13 Cor.] 4, 5, 6 Corinth. —14 Deut.] 1, 4, 5,  
6 Deut. mis-yoking mariage] 6 misyoking marriage —16 mis-  
matching] 6 mismatching Infidell:] 6 infidel; that] 1, 6 that,  
—17 incongruity] 4, 5 incongruitie —18 then] 6 than —19  
and] 1 & sowe] 6 sow nativity] 6 Nativity —20 dispositions;]  
1 dispositions. —20-p. 419, l. 12 which act . . . say so;] NOT IN 1.  
—21 voluntarie] 6 voluntary —22 language] 6 Language  
—23 original] 4, 5 originall therof] 4, 5, 6 thereof understanding]  
6 understanding, —24 will;] 4, 5 will: —26 unnaturall  
tribute] 6 unnatural Tribute —27 endew'd] 6 indew'd

## PAGE 418

—1 powerfull] 6 powerful —2 unequall] 6 unequal recom-  
pence.] 6 recompence; —3 wel] 4, 5, 6 well —4 morall]  
6 moral naturall] 6 natural alwayes] 4, 5 alwaies —5 choyce]  
4, 5, 6 choice succes] 6 success wil] 4, 5, 6 will —7 wise-  
dom] 6 wisdom —9 allotted] 4, 5, 6 allotted —10 Starre]  
4, 5, 6 Star supernall] 6 supernatural —11 elementall] 6 ele-  
mental —12 jointly] 4, 5, 6 joyntly —14 like] 6 like  
—15 proverb] 4, 5, 6 Proverb lesse] 6 less abstruse] 4, 5, 6 obtruse  
intitles] 4, 5, 6 entitles —16 worke] 4, 5, 6 work —17 him-  
selfe] 4, 5, 6 himself enough] 6 enough —18 espousall] 6 es-  
pousal —20 twofold] 6 two-fold —21 hatred] 6 hatred,  
—22 masse] 6 mass —24 workes] 4, 5, 6 works —26 exist-  
ence,] 6 existence;

## PAGE 419

—4 equall] 6 equal —6 succeed,] 4, 5 succeed 6 succeed;  
—7, 8 evill] 6 evil —8 either] 4, 5 neither dayes] 6 days  
—10 sonne,] 4, 5, 6 son soule] 4, 5, 6 soul —11 evill] 6 evil  
—12 for if the noysomnesse or disfigurement] 1 Surely if any noy-  
somnes noysomnesse] 1 noysomnes 6 noisomness can soon destroy]  
1 soon destroys —13 wedlock duties] 1 that work —14 wil]  
1, 4, 5, 6 will annoyance and trouble of mind] 1 antipathy of minde

selfe] 1, 4, 5, 6 self —16 fundamentall] 6 fundamental law  
 book] 6 Law-book —17 nature,] 1 nature; 6 Nature, there-  
 fore] 1 therfore —19 naturall] 6 natural creatures] 6 Creatures  
 —20 indignity] 4, 5 indignitie —21-p. 420, l. 6 And . . . cons-  
 sorts] 1 And when he forbids all unmatchable and unmingling natures  
 to consort, doubtles by all due consequence, if they chance through mis-  
 adventure to be miscoupl'd, he bids them part asunder, as persons whom  
 God never joyn'd. —23 then] 6 than likenesse] 6 likeness  
 womanhood] 6 Womanhood —24 dulnesse] 6 dulness —25  
 divinity] 6 Divinity no] 6 no, allegorick precepts] 6 Allegorick  
 Precepts —26 beneficence] 6 Beneficence closet] 6 Closet  
 nature] 6 Nature, —27 goodnes] 6 goodness —28 societies] 6 Societies

## PAGE 420

—1 dis-joyn] 6 disjoyn nature] 6 Nature signifies] 4, 5, 6 sig-  
 nifies, —2 onely] 4, 5, 6 only decrees] 6 Decrees —4 world]  
 6 World —5 confusion] 6 confusion, —6 consorts] 6 Consorts  
 —7 reason] 4, 5, 6 Reason mariage] 6 Marriage —8 endanger-  
 ing] 6 indangering —9 divinitie] 4, 5, 6 Divinity —9, 10  
 life] 6 Life —10 mariage] 6 Marriage, —11 Canon Law]  
 6 Canon-Law —12 anothers] 1 the others —14 mariage,]  
 1 mariage 6 Marriage, —14, 25 then] 6 than —15 bed:]  
 6 Bed; destroyes] 1, 4, 5, 6 destroys defiles:] 6 defiles. —16  
 being] 1 beeing —17 cours] 6 course sum'd] 1 summ'd  
 —18 lightsome] 1 lightsom and] 1 & —19 marriage: wherof]  
 6 Marriage; whereof —20 consort] 6 Consort oft-times] 1 oft-  
 times —21 ere] 6 e're grieve] 1, 4, 5, 6 grief —22 ther-  
 fore] 6 therefore danger] 2, 3 dnager foreseen,] 1 foreseen  
 —23 perill] 6 peril helple] 6 helpless —24 grieve] 1 greef  
 4, 5, 6 grief wilfull] 6 wilful cause;] 1 cause? 6 cause: certain]  
 6 certain, —25 preservation] 2, 3 peservation —26 mariage]  
 6 Marriage lesse then] 6 less than crueltie] 1 cruelty 6 cruelty,

## PAGE 421

—3 vigor] 6 vigour spiritfull] 6 spiritual —4 usefull] 6 use-  
 ful —5 employment] 6 imployment it therfore be] 1 it be ther-  
 fore 6 it therfore be —6 heaviness] 6 heaviness —8 Nothing]  
 1 nothing then] 6 than vowes] 1, 4, 5, 6 vows —9 Numbers]  
 1, 6 Numbers, —9, 12 wife] 6 Wife —10 authoritie] 1, 6  
 authority husband] 6 Husband —11 he breake] 1, 4, 5, 6 he  
 break —15 lesse] 6 less mariage] 6 Marriage —17 reason]  
 4, 5, 6 Reason —18 therefore] 4, 5 therfore —19 unfinesse]

6 *unfitness* —21 *ev'n*] 4, 5, 6 *even* —22 *yet are*] 1 *are yet*  
*destitut*] 1, 4, 5, 6 *destitute* —23 *mariageable*] 1 *mariagable*  
 6 *Marriageable* *gifts*,] 1 *gifts*; —24 *marry; unlesse*] 6 *marry,*  
*unless* —25 *therto*] 4, 5, 6 *thereto* *instrumentall*] 6 *instrumental*  
 —26 *Covenant*] 1 *Covnant*

## PAGE 422

—1 *such*,] 1 *such* *the*] 1 *OMITS.* —2 *themselves*,] 1 *them-*  
*selves doe*] 1, 4, 5, 6 *do* —3 *wedlock*] 6 *Wedlock* —4 *mar-*  
*ried*] 1 *married* *life*,] 6 *life*, —5 *unfitnes*] 6 *unfitness* *weari-*  
*somnesse*] 1 *wearisomnes* 6 *wearisomness* —7 *imagin'd*,] 4, 5  
*imagined*: 6 *imagined*; *to shut up and immure and shut up together,*  
*the one with a mischosen mate, the other in a mistak'n calling*] 1 *to shut*  
*up and immure in an unequal and mischosen match* CORRECTED IN  
 THE ADDENDA *to to shut up and immure together, the one with a mis-*  
*chosen mate, the other in a mistak'n calling,* —8 *up and immure*] 6  
*up, and immure,* —9 *mate*] 6 *Mate* *mistak'n*] 4, 5, 6 *mistaken*  
*cours*] 6 *course* —10 *Christian*] 1 *christian* *wisedome*] 1 *wis-*  
*dome* 4, 5, 6 *wisdom* *tendernesse*] 1 *tendernes* 6 *tenderness*  
 —11 *custome*] 1 *custom* *parents*] 6 *Parents* *guardians*] 6 *Guard-*  
*ians* —12 *mariages*] 6 *Marriages* —13 *only*] 4, 5 *onely*  
*thus*] 1 *this* —14 *freedom*] 1 *freedome* *endu'd*] 4, 5 *endued*  
 6 *indued* —15 *assasinated*] 6 *assassinated* *cruelty*] 1 *crueltie*  
 —16 *reason*] 4, 5, 6 *Reason* *mariage*] 6 *Marriage* *carnall*] 6 *carnal*  
 —17 *human*] 4, 5, 6 *humane* —18, 20 *Mariage*] 6 *Marriage*  
 —19 *vowes*] 4, 5, 6 *vows* —21 *mariage*] 6 *mariage* *Idoll*] 6  
*Idol* —23 *mariage*] 6 *marriage* *human*] 6 *humane* *Society*] 1  
*society* —24 *then*] 6 *than* —25 *animall*] 1, 6 *animal*

## PAGE 423

—1 *therefore*] 4, 5, 6 *therefore* *cannot*] 2, 3 *cnnot* —3 *for-*  
*mality*,] 1 *formalitie*, —4 *guilding*] 1 *gilding* *congresse*] 6  
*congress* —5 *purenesse*] 1 *purenes* 6 *pureness* —6 *Covnant*] 1  
*covenant* 4, 5, 6 *Covenant* —7 *Prov.*] 1 *Pro.* —8 *human*] 1  
*humane* *chiefe*] 1, 4, 5, 6 *chief* —9 *thereof*] 1 *therof* *soule*] 1,  
 4, 5, 6 *soul* —10 *therof*] 6 *thereof* *unfitnesse*] 1 *unfitnes*  
 6 *unfitness* —11 *body*,] 1 *body*; *least*] 1 *lest* —12, 20 *cov-*  
*nant*] 4, 5, 6 *cov'nant* —15 *wherof*] 6 *whereof* *farre*] 1, 4, 5,  
 6 *far* —16 *anger*,] 1 *anger* *to Malachy*] 1 *till after the captivity*  
 —19 *onely*] 1, 4, 5, 6 *only* —20 *and*] 1 & *lesse*] 6 *less*  
*power*,] 1 *power* —21 *then*] 6 *than* —22 *unfruitfull*] 6 *un-*  
*fruitful* —23 *doctrine*] 1 *doctrin* *unwillingnes*] 6 *unwilling-*  
*ness* —24 *wisedome*] 1, 4, 5, 6 *wisdom* —25 *therfore*] 6

therefore enjoyn] 1 enjoyn —26, 28 mariage] 6 marriage  
—27 bin] 1, 4, 5, 6 been

## PAGE 424

—3 doctrine] 6 Doctrine —4 wheras] 1 Wheras 6 whereas  
the *Covenant*] 1 *the covenant* 4, 5, 6 the *Cov'nant* —5 therfore]  
6 therefore —5, 9, 13 then] 6 than —6 false:] 1 false;  
—7 Infidell] 1 infidell 6 Infidel *Babel*,] 1 *Babel* the *Covenant*]  
1 *the covenant* 6 the *Covenant* —8 *God*,] 2, 3, 4, 5 *God*. Ezek.]  
1 Ezech. heare] 1, 4, 5, 6 hear —9 covenant] 4, 5 cov'nant  
—10 call'd] 4, 5 call'd covenant] 4, 5, 6 cov'nant —11 therin]  
6 therein mariage] 6 marriage —12 authour] 1, 4, 5, 6 author  
witnes] 6 witness —14 and] 1 & —15 fitness] 1 fitness  
6 fitness —17 joynd] 1 joyn'd 4, 5, 6 joynd together.] 2, 3  
together, 1 together: 6 together. —18 unfitness] 1 unfitness  
6 unfitness their] 2, 3 their —20 mutuall] 6 mutual happi-  
nesse] 1 hapines 6 happiness —21 joyn'd] 4, 5 joynd re-  
veal'd] 1 revel'd gracious] 1 gracious —23 tyrannesse] 6 tyran-  
ness goddesse] 6 goddess —24 enfranchiz'd] 6 enfranchis'd  
man:] 1 man; —24, 25 wherin] 6 wherein —25 wherein]  
1, 4, 5 wherin glorify'd] 6 glorifi'd —26 couple?] 1 couple;  
—27 lov'd] 6 loved severall cattell] 6 several cattel —28  
pleas'd] 4, 5, 6 pleased unmeetnesse] 1 unmeetnes 6 unmeetness  
mariage] 6 marriage

## PAGE 425

—2 fear'd] 4, 5, 6 feared —3 helpelesse] 1 helples 6 helpless  
—4 triall] 6 trial —7 could?] 1 could. —9 soules] 1, 4, 5,  
6 souls —10 precepts] 1 precepts, generall] 1, 6 general  
charity] 1 charitie —11 mariage] 6 Marriage Sacrament,] 6  
Sacrament —13 awfull] 6 awful —15 Indian] 1 *Indian*  
conferre] 6 confer —17 S.] 1 St. Councell] 6 Council  
—18 doe] 1, 4, 5, 6 do apply'd] 4, 5, 6 applied —25 *con-*  
*temne*] 6 *contemn* discipline] 2, 3 discipline

## PAGE 426

—2 conjecture;] 6 conjecture, —3 *Familism*] 1 *Famelism*  
—4 fanatick] 1 *fanatick* dreams (if we understand them not amisse)]  
1 dreams, amisse] 6 amiss —5 to Religion] 1 to a zeal of Religion  
—6 debaush't] 6 debauch't —7 be come] 1 come —9 chiefly]  
1 chiefly —10 lawfull liberty,] 6 lawful liberty deny'd] 6  
deni'd —12 natures] 6 Natures —14 and] 4, 5 & —15  
professing] 1, 6 professing, —16 do] 1 doe themselvs] 1, 4,  
5, 6 themselves whoredom] 1 whordom —17 adulteries,] 1

adulteries; 6 adulteries clergie] 1 clergy 6 Clergy —18  
 heare] 1, 4, 5, 6 hear reformation:] 6 Reformation; —20 mari-  
 age] 6 marriage —21 and] 1 & —24 skilfull] 1, 6 skilful  
 Theology, and] 1 *Theology*, & —25 and] 6 And lastly] 6  
 lastly, examine] 1 examin —26 strictnesse] 1 strictnes 6 strict-  
 ness blamelesse] 1 blameles 6 blameless —27 man,] 1 man  
 in those] 2, 3, in those in those reformation] 6 Reformation

## PAGE 427

—3 themselves] 6 themselves, —4 transgressions,] 1 transgres-  
 sions; —5 scan] 1 scanne —6, 8 then] 6 than literall]  
 1, 6 literal wisdom] 1, 4, 5, 6 wisdom equity] 1 enquiry  
 —7 duly] 1 duely Gospell] 1, 4, 5, 6 Gospel —9 soule] 1, 4,  
 5, 6 soul —11 regeneration] 6 Regeneration selfe] 1, 4, 5, 6  
 self —12 conversing] conversing, —13 sanctify'd] 6 sancti-  
 fyd together,] 1 together —14 jarre] 6 jar —15 marriage]  
 6 Marriage, Christianity] 1 Christianitie —16 lesse] 6 less  
 schandall] 1, 6 scandal 4, 5 scandall naturall] 1, 6 natural  
 —18 ensnared] 6 insnared soules] 1, 4, 5, 6 souls —19 *incon-  
 cileable*] 6 *irreconcilable* —20 dissevered,] 1 disseverd —21  
 relation.] 2, 3 relation alphabetically] 1 *alphabetical* 6 alphabetical  
 —22 urged] 1 urg'd —24 marry] 6 Marry

## PAGE 428

—1 *mariage*] 6 *Marriage* —2 *Excesse*] 6 *Excess* —3 *ex-  
 cesse*] 6 *excess* abrogat] 6 abrogate —4 *divorce*] 6 *Divorce*  
*only*] 4, 5 *only* *reprove*] 6 *reprieve* therof] 6 *thereof* —5-11  
 Hitherto . . . reconcil'd.] NOT IN 1. —5 bin] 4, 5, 6 been  
 —6, 7 prov'd] 4, 5, 6 proved —7 moral] 4, 5 morall unaboli-  
 shable] 6 unabolishable, —8 equal] 4, 5 equall therto] 6  
 thereto —9 now] 6 now, —10 mercifull] 6 merciful  
 —11 decree] 6 Decree For] 1 But —12 worth] 1, 6 worth,  
 will] 4, 5 wil whenas] 1, 6 when as *in case of fornication.*] 1 in  
 case of fornication; —14-p. 429, l. 16 To whom . . . against it.]  
 NOT IN 1. —14 minde] 4, 5, 6 mind —17 excepting.] 6 ex-  
 cepting, *doe*] 4, 5, 6 *do worke*] 4, 5 *work* 6 *work*, —18  
 commandment] 6 Commandment Yes] 6 Yes, Christ] 6 Christ,  
 —20 considerat] 6 considerate —20, 22 then] 6 than —22  
 lesse] 6 less

## PAGE 429

—1 scales] 6 Scales —2 goodnesse] 6 goodness benignity]  
 6 benignity, —4 lesse] 6 less then] 6 than —5 *mariage*]  
 6 marriage cruel] 4, 5 cruell senceles] 6 senceless —7 nor]

2, 3 OF CORRECTED IN ERRATA. —15 Scriptures,] 6 Scriptures.  
 —17 First therfore let us remember] 1 let such remember therfore]  
 6 therefore —18 wherin] 6 wherein doubt] 4, 5, 6 doubts  
 —25 literall] 6 literal —26 Wherin] 6 Wherein —28 excesse]  
 6 excess another] 6 another,

## PAGE 430

—1-2 THE PRINTER OF 6 INADVERTENTLY OMITTED A LINE, fect . . .  
 re- —2 remisse] 6 remiss —3 needfull] 6 needful —5 actual]  
 6 actual lesse] 6 less —6 weaknes] 6 weakness —7 heer]  
 6 here —10 uninjoy'd] 6 uninjoyn'd —11 *Rabbies*] 1 Rab-  
 bies —12 doe] 4, 5, 6 do —13 restraint] 1, 3 restraint,  
 —14 extreme] 6 extream —15 their] 1 thir naturall] 6 natural  
 straitnesse] 1 straitnes 6 straitness —17 Sermon,] 1 Sermon  
 —19 denounces] 4, 5, 6 denounce —21-24 But . . . which] 1 So  
 that the question of divorce following upon this his open profession,  
 —21 *Luke*,] 6 *Luke* before going] 6 before-going —22, 27  
 divorce] 6 Divorce —23 the] 2, 3 he witnesse] 6 witness  
 —24 wilfull] 6 wilful —24-25 which . . . us] NOT IN 3.  
 —25 us] 1 us, what ever] 3, 6 whatever political law] 1 political  
 Law —26 special] 1 speciall Jews] 1 *Jews* 4, 5 *Jewes*  
 —28 doctrine] 4, 5, 6 Doctrine Christ,] 1 Christ; —28-p.  
 431, l. 1 unlesse . . . profession;] NOT IN 1. —28 unlesse] 6 unless

## PAGE 431

—1 beleeve] 6 believe cautious] 3 cautions immediat] 6 imme-  
 diate —2 divorce] 6 Divorce —3 except it be for adultery]  
 IN ITALICS IN 3. —6 onely] 1 only —6, 7, 10 and] 1 &  
 —8 Judicial,] 1 judicial; —9 convinc't] 2, 3 covinc't —11  
 legall] 6 legal —12 unequall] 6 unequal —14 politicall]  
 6 political —15 edicts] 1 Edicts —16 necessity] 1 necessitie  
 —17 weak] 4, 5 weake first,] 1 first —18 choicest,] 2, 3  
 choicest —19 these] 1 these, in the best and holiest times.] NOT  
 IN 1. —20 times] 3 time be] 1 Be yeilded,] 1 yeilded 6  
 yielded, —21 not] 4, 5 nor law giver] 1 law-giver 6 lawgiver  
 —22 something] 1 something —24 so] 3 so so —26 repre-  
 hension] 2, 3 reprehension declares] 2, 3 dcclares —27 we] 1  
 wee endightment] 6 inditement being] 1 beeing

## PAGE 432

HEADING—3 CHAP . . . *sin*.] NOT IN 3, NO BREAK WHATEVER OC-  
 CURRING IN THE TEXT. FURTHERMORE, THE LAST THREE LINES OF  
 P. 33 (were . . . good) APPEAR ALSO AT THE TOP OF P. 34 WHERE  
 religion IS PRINTED reliegion AND fowl evill IS fou lvill —1 *divorce*]

6 *Divorce hardnesse*] 6 *hardness* —3 *lesse*] 6 *less* —4 *wil*] 1, 4, 5, 6 *will serve*] 1 *serv* —5 *hardnes*] 4, 5 *hardnesse* 6 *hardness* *their*] 1 *thir* *sense*] 1, 4, 5, 6 *sense*, as it is] 6 as is —8 *vitall*] 1, 6 *vital* *maxim*] 6 *Maxime* *religion*] 2, 3 *religion* 6 *Religion* *doing*] 1 *doeing* *foul evill*] 2, 3 *fou lvi* 1, 6 *foul evil* —10—p. 433, l. 15 *This . . . adulterously?*] NOT IN 1, BUT SUPPLIED IN THE ADDENDA; THE NEXT SENTENCE, AS FAR AS *charity*, IS ALSO INCLUDED. —10 *onely Text*] 1 *only text* *match't*] 6 *matcht* —11 *wherby*] 4, 5, 6 *whereby* *perfect*] 1 *perfet* *seem*] 4, 5 *seeme* —13 *owne*] 1, 6 *own* *civill*] 1, 6 *civil* —14 *covenant*] 1 *covnant* 4, 5 *cov'nant* —16 *covnant*] 4, 5, 6 *covenant* *grace*] 1 *grace*, —17 *doctrine*] 1 *doctrin* —18 *paradox*] 6 *Paradox* *til*] 1, 4, 5, 6 *till* —18, 24 *onely*] 1 *only* —19 *thred*] 6 *thread* *doubtfull*] 6 *doubtful* —22 *fear*] 4, 5 *feare* *tyrant*] 6 *tyrant* *politician*] 4, 5, 6 *explicitiat* CORRECTED IN THE ERRATA OF 4 TO *Politician* *then*] 6 *than* —25 *Romish*] 1 *Romish*, *statute*] 1 *Statute* —26 *seeme*] 1, 6 *seem* *legitimate vice*] 4, 5, 6 *the legitimate vices* —27 *sinne*] 1, 6 *sin* *selfe*] 1 *self* 6 *self*, *the ever . . . sin*] NOT IN 1 ADDENDA. &] 4, 5, 6 and

## PAGE 433

—1 *onely*] 1 *only* —3 *alledg'd*] 1 *alleg'd* 4, 5 *alledgd* 6 *alleged* *done*] 1 *don* —5 *authority*] 6 *authority* *endeavours to*] 1, 4, 5 *endeavours to* 6 *endeavours to* —6 *wickednes*] 6 *wickedness a law*] 1 *law* *selfe*] 1, 6 *self* —7 *layes*] 1 *lays* *decrees*] 4, 5 *decrees* —8 *Lawgiver*] 6 *Law-giver* —9 *deserves*] 1 *deservs* *edict*] 1 *Edict* —10 *confirms*] 4, 5, 6 *confirms* —11 *onely*] 1 *only* —12 *only*] 4, 5, 6 *only* —13 *themselves*] 1 *themselv* —14 *freedom*] 4, 5 *freedome* *then*] 6 *than* —15 *How can we*] 1 *Wee cannot* 1 ADDENDA *How can wee* *therfore*] 4, 5, 6 *therefore* —16 *dangerously*] NOT IN 1. —17 *letters*] 1 *letters*; 6 *Letters*, —18 *whenas*] 4, 5, 6 *when as* *former*] 1 *former*, —19 *words*] 4, 5, 6 *word* —19—20 *nor with . . . scope*] 1 *nor with the scope* 1 ADDENDA *nor with other* ETC. —20 *expresse*] 6 *express* —21 *commission*] 6 *Commission* *strain*] 4, 5, 6 *grain* —22 *only*] 4, 5, 6 *onely* —23 *terrifie*] 1 *terrify*

## PAGE 434

—1 *therfore*] 4, 5, 6 *therefore* *God.*] 4, 5 *God* —2 *sin*] 4, 5, 6 *sin* *then*] 6 *than* *objected*] 2, 3 *obejected* —4—p. 443, l. 20 *But . . . sense.*] NOT IN 1. —4 *examin*] 4, 5, 6 *examine* —6 *hardnesse*] 6 *hardness* *wil*] 4, 5, 6 *will* —8 *prov'd.*] 2, 3 *prov'd*, —9 *unlawful*] 4, 5 *unlawfull* —10 *don*] 6 *done*

—12 as] 4, 5 OMIT. —14 Morall] 4, 5 Morall Judicall] 6  
Judicial —20 selfe] 6 self own] 4, 5 owne —21 righteous-  
nesse] 6 righteousness —23 instead] 4, 5, 6 in stead sin] 4, 5  
sinne —24 therof] 6 thereof, —25 fals] 6 false —27  
soules] 6 souls

## PAGE 435

—1 lawfull,] 3 lawfull 6 lawful —3 charity,] 6 charity  
heart] 4, 5 hart —6 els] 6 else —7 Judicial] 4, 5 Judicall  
—8 clearly,] 6 clearly —11 forbear] 6 forbear wickednes]  
4, 5, 6 wickedness —12, 16 then] 6 than partial] 4, 5 partiall  
—13 uncleannes] 4, 5 uncleannesse] 6 uncleanness doe] 6 do  
—15 covnant] 6 covenant —16 selfe] 6 self —17 something]  
6 something —18 significant,] 3 significant; —20 it] 4, 5,  
6 it, —21 forget] 3 forges —22 expresse] 6 express re-  
peated] 3 repeated, —23 Canaanite] 4, 5, 6 Cananite expell]  
6 expel —24 truth] 6 truth, reasonlesse] 6 reasonless —25  
proclaime] 6 proclaim —27 spake] 4, 5 speake 6 speak per-  
petual] 4, 5 perpetuall —28 manumitted] 4, 5 manumitted

## PAGE 436

—1 all] 6 all, eternal] 4, 5 eternall —2 law] 6 Law  
—4 together] 4, 5, 6 together both hemisphere] 3 hemisper  
—5 darknes] 4, 5 darknesse 6 darkness —7 brightnesse] 6  
brightness surpasse] 6 surpass —11 remisnes] 6 remisness  
this:] 3 this, remedy] 4, 5 remdy hardnes] 4, 5 hardnesse 6  
hardness —12 confesse] 6 confess encreases] 6 increases  
—14 yeelded to,] 6 yielded to —14, 26 then] 6 than —17  
only] 4, 5 onely —18 extreme] 4, 5 extreame 6 extream  
—19 daughters] 6 Daughters, —22 forwarn'd] 3 forwar'd  
—24 calmely] 6 calmly —25 heavy] 4, 5 heavie —27  
Judgement] 4, 5, 6 Judgment trifle] 2, 3 trifle 6 trifie

## PAGE 437

—1 Lawgiver] 6 Lawgiver, punctuall] 6 punctual —4 Cæsar]  
6 Cæsar overswayd] 6 overswayed —5 a doe] 6 ado —6 lesse  
a doe] 6 less ado —9 bottomlesse] 6 bottomless —10 infinit]  
4, 5, 6 infinite purenes] 6 pureness, —13 soule] 6 soul  
—14 disgrace,] 6 disgrace No,] 4, 5, 6 No bin] 6 been —15  
matrimony] 6 Matrimony —16 fast'nd] 6 fastn'd holy] 6 Holy  
—17 peece] 6 piece folly] 6 follow —19 to compasse] 3 com-  
passe 6 to compass —20 yeild] 6 yield —21 evill] 6 evil  
—22 own] 4, 5 owne purenes] 6 pureness —24 lawgiver] 6  
Lawgiver —25 licenc't] 6 licen't —26 brother,] 4, 5, 6



*brother* —27 sooth him,] 6 sooth him —28 *neighbours*] 4  
*neibours* 5 *neighbors*

## PAGE 438

—1 *and*] 5 & *ruin.*] 6 *ruin*, —2 *sin,*] 6 *sin*; —3 *trans-*  
*gresse*] 6 *transgress* —4 *own*] 4, 5 *owne* —5 *vertue*] 6 *Vertue*  
 —7 *offring*] 6 *offering* —8 *goe*] 6 *go* —9 *himselfe*] 4, 5, 6  
*himself* —10 *Law*] 6 *law* —13 *selfe*] 4, 5, 6 *self* —14  
*sin,*] 3 *sin*; —15 *imagin*] 4, 5, 6 *imagine* enough] 6 *enough*  
 15, 24 *unlesse*] 6 *unless* —17 11. *Psalm*] 6 21 *Psalm* ques-  
 tionlesse] 6 *questionless* —18 *saith*] 6 *saith*, *ministry*] 6 *min-*  
*istry* —19 *unto*] 6 *for* waies] 4, 5, 6 *wayes* —22 *licenc't*] 6  
*licenc'd* hardnesse] 6 *hardness* —24 *Rom.*] 6 *Rom.* —25  
*axioms*] 6 *Axioms* then] 6 *than* —25-28 *Arts*; that a thing . .  
*Philosophy.*)] 4, 5, 6 *Arts* (although it be no lesse firme in the precepts  
 of *Philosophy*) that a thing ETC. —26 *that*] 2, 3 (that *unlaw-*  
*full*] 6 *unlawful* —27 *lesse*] 6 *less* —28 *firm*] 4, 5 *firme*

## PAGE 439

—2 *took*] 4, 5 *tooke* —3 *Spirit*] 6 *Spirit*, —5 *wholsom*] 4,  
 5, 6 *wholsome* —7 *hardnes*] 4, 5 *hardnesse* 6 *hardness*  
 —13 *self*] 4, 5 *selfe* —14 *grant,*] 4, 5 *grant*; *approvs*] 4, 5, 6  
*approves* —15 *maxim is,*] 6 *Maxim is* —17 *evill*] 6 *evil*  
 —19 *righteousnesse*] 6 *righteousness* —20 *fathers*] 2, 3 *Fathers*  
*himselfe*] 6 *himself* —21 *only*] 4, 5, 6 *onely* —22 *generall*] 6  
*general* —23 *unlawfull*] 6 *unlawful* —24 *then*] 6 *than*  
*or*] 4, 5, 6 *and* —25 *maintaining;*] 6 *maintaining*: —26 *evill*] 6  
*evil* *reprobat*] 4, 5, 6 *reprobate* —27 *surname,*] 4, 5, 6 *sur-*  
*name* *contrary*] 2, 3 *cantrary*

## PAGE 440

—1 *publick*] 4, 5 *publicke* —2 *Lord*] 6 *Lord*, *doe*] 6 *do*  
 —4 *lesse*] 6 *less* —5 *sinfull*] 6 *sinful* —7 *Antinomie*] 6  
*Antimonie* —8 *fact,*] 4, 5, 6 *fact* *himselfe*] 6 *himself* —10  
 &] 6 *and* —11 *reveled wil,*] 4, 5 *revealed will* 6 *revealed will*,  
*complete*] 4, 5, 6 *compleat* *evident,*] 6 *evident* —12 *appears*] 4,  
 5 *appeares* *human*] 6 *humane* —13, 14 *himself*] 4, 5 *him-*  
*selfe* —16 *right*] 4, 5, 6 *the right* *lesse*] 6 *less* —17, 20  
*then*] 6 *than* —17 *legall*] 6 *legal* —21 *on*] 4, 5, 6 *upon*  
*goe*] 4, 5, 6, *go* —24 *solution*] 6 *Solution* —25 *Jesuits,*] 6  
*Jesuits* *sect*] 6 *Sect* —26 *author*] 6 *Author* —27 *sinne*] 6  
*Sin* *speak*] 4, 5 *speake* *permissions*] 4, 5, 6 *permission* —28  
*damnation*] 2, 3 *danmation*

## PAGE 441

—1, 3 sinne] 6 sin —2 means] 4, 5 meanes —4 wherin] 4, 5, 6 wherein —5 free will] 6 free-will —6 time] 6 time, —7 owne] 4, 5, 6 own methinks] 4, 5 me thinks —8 us.] 4, 5 us, Whenas] 4, 5, 6 When as —9 *Academic*] 4, 5 *Academies* —11 *Adam*] 6 *Adam*, guide] 6 guid —12 happinesse] 6 happiness —15 *divine*] 2, 3 *divine* —16 find] 2, 3, 4, 5 give  
 CORRECTED IN ERRATA. 6 give counsels] 4, 5 counsell 6 Councils  
 —17 mortall] 6 mortal —18 freewill] 2, 3, 4, 5 will CORRECTED IN ERRATA. 6 will self-corrupted] 4, 5 selfe corrupted 6 self corrupted —20 expresse] 6 express *Iliad*] 4, 5 *Ilead* *Odyssei*] 4, 5, 6 *Odyssei* —21 Poet,] 4, 5 Poet —22 sinne] 6 sin —23 cheerfulnes] 6 cheerfulness he acquitts] 2, 3, 4, 5 acquits CORRECTED IN ERRATA. 6 acquits —27 himselfe] 6 himself —28 they held hee did] 6 he held they did

## PAGE 442

—1 hard'n'd] 3 hard'ned 6 hardn'd —2 desperat] 4, 5, 6 desperate work] 4, 5 worke —3 into] 4, 5, 6 unto locall hell] 6 local Hell aire] 6 Air —4 center] 6 Center bottomlesse] 6 bottomless —5 holy blisse then] 6 Holy Bliss than worlds diameter multipli'd,] 6 Worlds Diameter multipli'd; —6 had] 4, 5, 6 OMIT. proportionat] 4, 5, 6 proportionate —8 think] 4, 5 thinke —9 upon] 2, 3 uopn —10 *Campanian*] 6 *Companion* —14 *Piso*,] 6 *Piso* —15 of the] 3 to Soothsayers] 4, 5 soothsayers 6 sooth-sayers *Clodius*,] 6 *Clodius*; publikly] 3, 6 publickly —16 ears] 3, 4, 5 eares —17 miserable,] 2, 3 miserable, 4, 5 miserable: 6 miserable, —18 sinnfull] 6 sinful —21 men] 6 Men —25 enemies] 6 enimes rebuks] 4, 5, 6 rebuke shall by patent] 3 by patent shall —26 seal allow] 4, 5 seale allow 6 seal d allow friends] 4, 5, 6 friend —27 sanctify] 6 sanctifie himselfe] 6 himself —28 dis-joyne] 6 dis-joyn

## PAGE 443

—1 hee] 6 he —3 wil] 3, 4, 5, 6 will edify'd] 3 edefy'd perpetrating] 6 prepetrating —4 lest] 6 least —5 Tis] 6 'Tis wonder'd] 4, 5, 6 wonderd secret,] 6 secret —6 a reveal'd] 6 reveal'd —8 fraternall warre] 6 fraternal war —9 lesse] 6 less —10 which law] 3 which —12 tremble] 4, 5 tremple incarnat] 6 incarnate —13 unpunishing,] 4, 5, 6 unpunishing —14 dreadfull] 4, 5, 6 dreadful —15 farre] 4, 5, 6 far —19 giv'n] 4, 5, 6 given —20 hardnesse] 6 hardness

—21 *marriage*] 6 *marriage* —22 *sinfull*] 4, 5 *lawfull* 6 *lawful*  
 —23 *dispenc't*] 6 *dispenc'd* —24 *mind.*] 2, 3 *mind*

PAGE 444

—1 *matter*] 1 *matter*, —2 *onely*] 1 *only* *dispensation,*] 1 *dispensation*;  
 —3 *himselfe*] 1, 6 *himself* —4 *Law,*] 1 *Law*  
*Mark*] 2, 3, 4, 5 *Mark*. —4—p. 453, l. 22 or if we . . . this while]  
 1 But I answer admitting it to be a dispensation, yet this is a certain rule, that so long as the cause remains, the dispensation ought: Let it be shewn therefore either in the nature of the Gospel, or of man, why this dispensation should be made void. The Gospel indeed exhorts to highest perfection; but bears with weakest infirmity more then the Law. The nature of man is as weak, and yet as hard: and that weaknes and hardnes as unfit, and as unteachable to be harshly dealt with as ever. I but, say they, there is a greater portion of spirit powr'd upon the Gospel which requires perfect obedience. But that consequence is deceivable; for it is the Law that is the exacter of our obedience ev'n under the Gospel; how can it then exact concerning divorce, that which it never exacted before? The Gospel is a covenant reveling grace, not commanding a new morality, but assuring justification by faith only, contented if we endeavour to square our moral duty by those wise and equal Mosaick rules, which were as perfect as strict and as unpardonable to the *Jews*, as to us; otherwise the law were unjust, giving grace of pardon without the Gospel, or if it give allowance without pardon, it would be dissolute and deceitfull; saying in general, *do this and live*; and yet deceaving and damning with obscure and hollow permissions. Wee find also by experience that the Spirit of God in the Gospel hath been alwaies more effectual in the illumination of our minds to the gift of faith, then in the moving of our wills to any excellence of vertue, either above the *Jews* or the Heathen. Hence those indulgences in the Gospel; *All cannot receive this saying; Every man hath his proper gift*, with strict charges not to lay on yokes which our Fathers could not bear.

But this that *Moses* suffer'd for the hardnes of thir hearts he suffer'd not by that enacted dispensation, farre be it, but by a meer accidental sufferance of undiscover'd hypocrites, who made ill use of that Law; for that God should enact a dispensation for hard hearts to do that whereby they must live in priviledg'd adultery, however it go for the receav'd opinion, I shall ever disswade my self from so much hardihood as to believe: Certainly this is not the manner of God, whose pure eyes cannot behold, much lesse his perfect Laws dispence with such impurity; and if we consider well, we shall finde that all dispensations are either to avoid worse inconveniences, or to support infirm consciences for a time; but that

a dispensation should be as long liv'd as a Law to tolerate adultery for hardnes of heart, both sins perhaps of like degree, and yet this obdurate disease cannot be conceav'd how it is the more amended by this unclean remedy, is a notion of that extravagance from the sage principles of piety, that who considers thoroughly, cannot but admire, how this hath been digested all this while.

—5 marriage] 6 marriage selfe] 4, 5, 6 self —6 onely] 4, 5, 6 only —8 giv'n] 6 given —9, 10 himselfe] 4, 5, 6 himself —12 sinne] 4, 5, 6 sin selfe] 4, 5, 6 self —14 man;] 6 man —15 evill:] 4, 5 evil: 6 evil. —17 heare] 4, 5, 6 hear —20 law] 6 Law —21 hatefull] 6 hateful evill] 4, 5, 6 evil —22 ordain'd] 4, 5, 6 ordain'd Ro.] 4, 5, 6 Rom. —26 himselfe] 4, 5, 6 himself —27 els] 6 else —28 banefull] 4, 5 banefull bloody] 6 bloody covnant] 4, 5, 6 covenant

## PAGE 445

—1 and] 6 & —2 Ro.] 4, 5, 6 Rom. and] 2, 3 and —4 practice] 6 practise uncleannesse] 6 uncleanness covnant] 4, 5 cov'nant 6 covenant —5 doe] 4, 5, 6 do —6 waigh'd] 4, 5 waighed 6 weighed —7 founders] 6 Founders dispence] 6 Dispence —9, 12 himselfe] 4, 5, 6 himself —12 meanes] 4, 5, 6 means —13 whereby] 4, 5 wherby —14 wisdom] 4, 5, 6 wisdom —16 wayes] 6 ways providence,] 6 Providence —17 secret] 6 secret, —19 wherof] 6 whereof plain] 6 plainly —20 enough] 6 enough reveal'd] 4, 5 reveal'd 6 revealed therof] 6 thereof —22 hee] 4, 5, 6 he —23 extoll] 6 extol Lawes] 4, 5 Laws 6 laws onely] 6 only —25 ev'n] 4, 5, 6 even himselfe] 4, 5, 6 himself —26 seem'd] 4, 5, 6 seemed —27 wherewith] 6 wherewith enlight'n'd] 4, 5, 6 enlightned —28 selfe] 4, 5, 6 self

## PAGE 446

—1 That] 6 that —2 doe] 4, 5, 6 do Therby] 6 thereby —3 righteousness] 6 righteousness —4 selfe] 4, 5, 6 self doe] 4, 5, 6 do Psal.] 6 Ps. —6, 8 faithfull] 6 faithful therfore] 6 therefore —7 onely] 4, 5, 6 only authours] 4, 5 authors 6 Authors —8 owne] 4, 5, 6 own —9 himselfe,] 4, 5 himself, 6 himself: —10 rules.] 2, 3 rules uprightness] 4, 5 uprightness 6 uprightness —11 ways] 4, 5 waies principles.] 2, 3 principles —12 els] 6 else —13 hee] 4, 5, 6 he Poetick] 6 poetick —14 fabl'd] 4, 5, 6 fabled —17 wherfore] 4, 5, 6 wherefore indulgence,] 6 indulgence —18 brest] 6 breast resolv'd] 4, 5, 6 resolved —19 law] 4, 5, 6 Law —22 filthines] 6 filthiness

—23 therof] 4, 5, 6 thereof Sages:] 6 Sages. —24 filthinesse]  
6 filthiness —25 designe] 6 design —26 righteousness] 6  
righteousness

## PAGE 447

—1 mariage] 6 marriage covenant] 4, 5, 6 covenant —2 him-  
selfe] 4, 5, 6 himself loosn'd] 4, 5, 6 loosned law] 4, 5, 6 Law  
—3 bee] 4, 5, 6 be —4 incertainties] 6 uncertainties doubts]  
6 doubts, —7 Therefore] 6 Therefore satisfaction,] 2, 3 satis-  
faction. —8 enquire] 6 inquire can,] 6 can —9, 23 dispen-  
sation] 6 Dispensation —10 call'd,] 6 call'd —11 and dis-  
obliging] 4, 5 & disobliging —13 Numb.] 4, 5, 6 Num.  
—14 journey] 6 journey passover] 4, 5 passeover 6 Passeover  
—15 first.] 2, 3 first, *Leviticus*] 2, 3 *Leviticus* —16 marrying]  
4, 5, 6 marrying penall] 6 penal —17 dispence] 6 dispence  
—18 selfe] 4, 5, 6 self onely preferres] 4, 5, 6 only prefers spe-  
ciall] 6 special charitie,] 6 charity —19 decencie] 6 decency  
—20 onely] 4, 5 only prohibition] 2, 3 prohibition —21 edict]  
6 Edict carrying] 4, 5 carrying, —22 beare] 4, 5, 6 bear  
—23 dispence] 6 Dispence —24 properly,] 4, 5, 6 properly  
happ'ning] 4, 5, 6 hapning, —25 therfore] 6 therefore speci-  
fy'd] 6 specified the decision] 2, 3 the decision

## PAGE 448

—1 charity] 4, 5 charitie ev'n] 6 even —3 *Shew bread*] 6  
*Shewbread* —4 unlawfull] 6 unlawful —5 such] 2, 3 such  
dispences] 6 dispences —6 Councell] 6 Council —7 dis-  
pence] 6 dispence —8 *perswasion*] 6 *persuasion dispencing*] 6  
*dispensing justice*,] 6 *justice* —10 *give*] 6 *gives not*:] 6 *not*,  
—11 *law*] 4, 5, 6 *Law farre*] 6 far —12 God] 6 God,  
—13 every] 2, 3 ery *James*] 4, 5, 6, *Jam.* —14 dispensation]  
6 Dispensation —15 law wherby] 6 Law whereby priviledg'd]  
6 privileg'd —16 hardnes] 6 hardness yet] 6 omits. obdurat]  
6 obdurate —17 bee conceiv'd] 6 be conceived —18 Scorpion  
like] 6 Scorpion-like —20 dispence] 6 Dispence —21 ser-  
pent] 4, 5, 6 Serpent —23 evill] 6 evil hee] 4, 5, 6 he  
—24 covnant] 4, 5 cov'nant 6 covenant —25 unpassionat] 6  
unpassionate licence,] 6 licence uncontroul'd] 6 uncontrolled  
—26 goe] 4, 5, 6 go ever] 6 never —27 dissuade] 6 dissuade  
—28 forg'd] 2, 3 fotg'd

## PAGE 449

—1 *dispence*,] 6 *Dispence* —3 a while] 6 awhile —4  
*farre*] 6 far sinne] 4, 5, 6 sin —5 dispenc't:] 6 dispenc't;

—7 indulgence,] 6 indulgence —8 wherin] 6 wherein —9 wherto] 6 whereto —10 Psalmes and Proverbs] 6 *Psalms* and *Proverbs* —11 surenesse] 6 sureness certainty] 4, 5, certaintie 6 certainty, —13 plain morall] 6 plain, moral, —14 mariage] 6 Marriage —15 clearnesse] 6 clearness —16 argu'd] 6 argued hee] 4, 5, 6 he —18 onely] 4, 5, 6 only addes] 6 adds —20 fetcht] 6 fetch't encreast] 6 encreas'd —21 *Clandestine* mariages] 6 *clandestine* marriages —22 sayings] 6 Sayings —23 owne] 4, 5, 6 own —26 Jewes] 4, 5, 6 Jews therfore] 6 therefore

## PAGE 450

—1 dispenc't] 6 dispenc'd morall] 6 moral —2 knowledge,] 6 knowledge —5 fore-skin] 6 foreskin —6 upon] 4, 5, 6 into —7 covnant] 4, 5 cov'nant 6 covenant wherinto] 6 whereinto enter'd] 6 entered —8 enough] 6 enough fancie] 6 fancy dispensing] 6 dispensing testifies] 6 testifies, —10 Gal.] 6 *Gal.* els] 6 else Rom.] 6 *Ro.* —11 then] 4, 5 then, needs] 4, 5 need —12 Flesh] 4, 5, 6 flesh signe] 6 sign —14 reall] 6 real —15 tedious] 6 tedious —16 sinne] 4, 5, 6 sin privilege] 6 privilege —17 odious] 2, 3 odidious —18 obstinacie] 6 obstinacy &] 4, 5, 6 and —19 circumstantial] 4, 5 circumstantiall purenes] 6 pureness —20 liberall] 6 liberal substantiall] 6 substantial —21 impurenesse] 6 impureness covnant] 4, 5 cov'nant 6 covenant —25 beleve and be baptiz'd;] 6 *Believe and be baptized*, —26 bee] 4, 5, 6 be

## PAGE 451

—1 therefore] 4, 5 therfore dispenc't] 6 dispenc'd —2 Christian] 4, 5 Christians —3 *Law:*] 6 *Law.* —4 answer'd] 4, 5, 6 *answered* —5 wil] 4, 5, 6 will —8 lesse] 6 less —9 Gospell] 4, 5, 6 Gospel perfection] 4, 5, 6 perfection, beares] 4, 5, 6 bears —11 saying.] 6 saying, —12 expresse] 6 express to] 2, 3 to *to* —13 fathers] 6 forefathers beare] 4, 5, 6 bear —14 weak] 6 weak, weaknesse] 4, 5 weaknes 6 weakness hardnesse] 6 hardness —15 bee] 4, 5, 6 be us'd] 4, 5, 6 used but] 6 but, —16 Spirit] 6 spirit powr'd] 4, 5 poured 6 poured —18 law therfore] 4, 5, 6 Law therefore —19 sinne] 4, 5, 6 sin —20 wee] 4, 5, 6 we —21 *evil]* 6 *evil* —22 naturall] 6 natural ev'n] 4, 5, 6 even —23 and] 4, 5 & reasons] 6 reason, —24 dispence] 6 Dispence

## PAGE 452

—1 lesse] 6 less —2 sinne or no sinne;] 4, 5 sin or no sin; 6

sin or no sin. and] 6 And —3 requir'd] 4, 5, 6 required Gossell:] 4, 5 Gospel: 6 Gospel. besides] 6 Besides, —7 it] 6 it, ev'n] 4, 5, 6 even Gossell:] 6 Gospel, bee] 4, 5, 6 be —8 now,] 6 now Jewes] 4, 5 Jews 6 *Jews* old:] 6 old; —9 Gossell] 4, 5, 6 Gospel —10 harmless] 6 harmless needfull dispences] 6 needful Dispences, —12 els] 6 else —13 giv'n] 4, 5, 6 given —14 general] 4, 5 general] 6 general, doe] 4, 5 do 6 Do —15 hand,] 6 hand —17 bin] 6 been shewd] 4, 5, 6 shewed sinles] 6 sinless —18 tendernes] 6 tenderness —21 faire] 4, 5, 6 fair —22 wheras] 6 whereas —23 illustrat] 6 illustrate —23, 25 mildnesse] 6 mildness —24 grace;] 6 grace: unmildnesse] 6 unmildness —25 mildnesse] 6 mildness —27 strictnes] 6 strictness own,] 6 own —28 grace,] 4, 5, 6 grace

## PAGE 453

—1 dispenc't] 2 dispenc,t 6 dispens'd it,] 6 it —2 diminisht] 6 diminish'd unlesse] 6 unless —6 lesse] 6 less —8, 11 therefore] 6 therefore —12 Jews] 6 *Jews* Christians] 6 *Christians* —14 enquir'd] 4, 5 enquired 6 inquired —15 dispence] 6 Dispence —16 Jew and Christian] 6 *Jew* and *Christian* —17 stands] 6 stand —18 law,] 6 Law law-like] 6 Lawlike —19 dispence] 6 Dispence hardnesse] 4, 5 hardnes 6 hardness —20 who so] 6 whoso —21 admire] 4, 5 admire, —23 sence] 6 *sense* *Moses suffer'd*] 4, 5, 6 *Moses suffered divorce*] 6 *Divorce* *hardnesse*] 6 *hardness*

## PAGE 454

—1 What] NO PARAGRAPH IN I. doe] 4, 5, 6 do —3 don] 4, 5, 6 done way] 1 way, this.] 6 this: —4 *Moses* Deut.] 1, 6 *Moses, Deut.* —5 nature] 6 Nature —6 resisted;] 6 resisted, —7 Nations.] 1 nations. 6 nations, —8 married] 6 married passe] 6 pass —9 unfitnes] 6 unfitness —10 law] 6 Law —11 and] 4, 5 & —12 helples] 6 helpless —13 wherby] 6 whereby cheerfully] 1 cherfully —14 perpetual] 4, 5 perpetuall —18 dismisse] 6 dismiss —19 tolerably] 1 tolerably, law] 1 Law —20 *Salomon*] 4, 5, 6 *Solomon* Pro. 30. 21. 23.] 6 Pro. 30. 21, 23. —21 Law;] 6 Law, it] 1 it, *a hated*] 1 to dwell with a *hated* —22 so] 1 *hated* hebrew] 4, 5, 6 Hebrew —22—24 rather then . . . married,] NOT IN I. —23 odious] 6 *odious* that a] 6 that A *woman*] 6 *woman*, —24 married] 6 married earth] 1 nature beare] 1 *endure* 4, 5, 6 *bear* —25 the charitable] NOT IN I. —26 nature] 6 Nature under-

goe.] 4, 5 undergo. 6 undergo? hard hearted] 1 hard-hearted  
—27 cloak] 6 cloke their] 1 thir —28 beleeve] 6 believe

## PAGE 455

—1 hardnes] 6 hardness —2 Law] 6 Law, —4 loose] 6  
lose lawfull] 6 lawful priviledge] 1, 6 privilege —5 therfore]  
6 therefore —8 Law] 4, 5, 6, law —10 tells] 4, 5, 6 tells  
their] 1 thir forc't] 6 forc'd —11 we] 1 wee —12 fifth of  
*Matth.*] 4, 5 *Matth.* 5. 6 *Math.* 5. —13 Pharisaiical] 4, 5 Phar-  
isaicall falsly] 2, 3, 4, 5 fasly —14 Chap.] 1 *Chap.* and] 1 &  
*Mark*] 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6 *Mark.* —15 conceale] 4, 5, 6 conceal  
—16 them,] 1 them —18 *hardnesse*] 1 *hardnes* 6 *hardness*  
*heart suffer'd*] 1 *hearts sufferd* —22 Law:] 1 Law; for] 4, 5,  
6 and —24 rebukt] 1 rebuk't 6 rebuk'd —25 requisit] 6  
requisite —25-p. 456, l. 18 But us . . . befitted,] NOT IN 1.  
—25 better] 2, 3 betrer —26 cares] 4, 5, 6 ears himselfe] 4,  
5, 6 himself

## PAGE 456

—1 *unfained*] 6 *unfeigned* —2 chapter] 4, 5, 6 chap. —3  
appeares] 4, 5, 6 appears *good,*] 6 *good* —5 allow'd;] 4, 5, 6  
allow'd, —6 unlawfull] 6 unlawful therof] 6 thereof hypo-  
crits] 4, 5, 6 hypocrites —7 suffer'd; fore seeing] 6 suffer'd  
foreseeing —9 intended:] 6 intended, —11 scornfull] 6  
scornful untill] 6 until —12 had, lesse] 6 and less —18  
and] 1 And yet furdur] 1 the more 6 yet further —19 they]  
1 the Pharises fulfill] 6 fulfil —21 ordain'd] 1 ordaind fall,]  
1 fall —23 separate] 4, 5, 6 separte

## PAGE 457

—1 he had indeed] 4, 5, 6 indeed he had —2 higher,] 4, 5, 6  
higher —3 pattern] 6 patern —4 Pharises] 6 Pharisees  
—5 rule,] 1 rule —6 giv'n] 6 given —8, 10 *Therefore*] 4,  
5, 6 *Therefore* —11 mis-obedience] 6 misobedience —12  
husband] 6 Husband —15 farre] 6 far —16 *flesh*] 6 *flesh*,  
*bone,*] 4, 5 *bone* —18 unseparable] 4, 5 unseperable 6 inseper-  
able and] 1 & —19 *Therefore*] 4, 5, 6 *Therefore* —20  
finde] 6 find —21 divorcing,] 6 divorcing —22 lonelines]  
6 loneliness —23 *meet help*] 1 *help meet* first,] 4, 5, 6 first;  
—25 vers.] 1 *ver.* 4, 5, 6 vers. and] 1 & —26 *Adam*] 1, 4,  
5, 6 *Adam*, —28 we] 1 wee depreste] 6 depress all-wise] 6  
all wise

## PAGE 458

—1 produc't] 6 produc'd —2 man] 1 man, accidentall] 6



accidental —4 farre lesse] 6 far less —5 adventures] 6 adventures fastn'd] 6 fastened —6 sense] 4, 5 sence —7 and,] 6 and all-interpreting] 6 all interpreting —8 self] 4, 5 selfe —9 make] 2, 3 make a] 4, 5, 6 OMIT. —10 onely] 6 only —12 askt] 6 ask'd —13 of being] 1 of beeing 4, 5, 6 being self] 4, 5 selfe —15 concluded:] 1 concluded, therfore] 4, 5, 6 therefore she] 1 shee and] 1 & —16 help,] 6 help cleerly] 6 clearly —17-p. 459, l. 10 If this . . . heaven.)] NOT IN 1. —18 anough] 3, 4, 5 anough, 6 enough furder] 6 further mariage] 6 Marriage unlesse] 6 unless —19 mariage] 6 marriage —20 Not by nature] 6 Not by nature, —21 Mosaick divorces] 6 Mosaick Divorces bin] 6 been —22 be:] 6 be? —23 Law] 6 law Philosophy] 4, 5 Phylosophy —24 reckning] 4, 5, 6 reckoning bee] 4, 5, 6 be unmosaick] 6 unmosaick —25 illegal] 4, 5 illegall unnaturall] 6 unnatural —27 Law] 6 law —28 it:] 6 it; judgement] 4, 5, 6 judgment

## PAGE 459

—1 book] 4, 5 booke Lawes] 6 Laws Law-giver] 6 Lawgiver —2 decrees] 6 Decrees —3 deem'd] 6 deemed —4 cvill] 6 evil bee] 6 be —5 things] 3, 4, 5, 6 things, religion] 6 Religion —6 charity] 6 Charity chiefe] 6 chief —7 frustrat] 4, 5, 6 frustrate ordain'd] 6 ordained shown] 6 shewn —8 inseparable,] 4, 5 inseparable lawlesse] 6 lawless —9 (or under heaven.)] 3, 4, 5, 6 under Heaven. —10-11 From . . . gather] 1 Hence is manifest —13 non-plus] 1 nonplus 6 non plus Pharises;] 6 Pharisees, —14 Scriptures.] 4, 5 Scriptures —15 have] 6 Have —18 chair] 4, 5 chaire 6 Chair —20 mischiefs,] 1 mischiefs 6 mischiefs, clogge] 6 clog rationall] 1, 6 rational —21 endlesse] 1 endles 6 endless unrelinquishably,] 1 unrelinquishably. —21-22 under . . . comfort.] NOT IN 1. guilefull] 6 guileful —23 answer'd,] 6 answer'd? Master,] 1 Master mean] 1 intend 4, 5 meane —24 begining] 1, 4, 5, 6 beginning —25 meant] 1 intended soon] 4, 5 soone we] 1 wee —26 law] 1, 6 Law —27 Doubtlesse] 1 doubtles 6 Doubtless —28 this] 6 his

## PAGE 460

—1 himselfe] 1, 6 himself lawes] 2, 3 lewes 1 laws 6 Laws divorce] 6 Divorce —4 permissions] 6 permissions, —5 we] 1 wee lawfully doe] 6 lafully do divorce] 6 Divorce —6 Disciples] 4, 5 Disciples —7 rigour] 1, 6 rigor —8 pronounc't] 6 pronounc'd Pharises] 6 Pharisees —9 answer'd] 6 answered

—10 leaven'd] 6 leavened licence,] 6 licence —11 Pharises]  
 6 Pharisees maintain'd,] 1 maintain'd; 6 maintained, displeas'd]  
 6 displeased —12 traditionall] 1, 6 traditional abuse] 6 abuse,  
 wherto] 4, 5, 6 whereto —13 bin us'd] 6 been used —14  
 and prejudicial] 4, 5 an prejudicial wherein] 4, 5, 6 wherein  
 —15 attention] 6 attention, —16 informe] 1, 6 inform enough]  
 6 enough —16—p. 461, l. 11 And yet . . . Saviour.] NOT IN 1.  
 —17 finisht] 6 finished pickt] 6 pick'd —18 words,] 6 words  
 —20 entreating audience.] 6 intreating audience: saith] 3, 4, 5, 6  
 said —21 saying,] 4, 5 saying given,] 6 given: —23 What]  
 6 what —24 life.] 6 life? Was] 2, 3, 6 was 4, 5 Was then  
 so] 4, 5, 6 so favourable] 4, 5, 6 so favourable —25 weaknesse]  
 6 weaknes —27 hec] 6 he —28 married] 4, 5, 6 married  
 PAGE 461

—1 accidentall doore] 6 accidental door mariage] 4, 5, 6 mari-  
 riage —2 death] 6 death, —4 mariage] 4, 5 marriage 6  
 Marriage, for all] 2, 3 for, all CORRECTED IN ERRATA. mischiefs]  
 6 mischiefs —5 sorrowes] 6 sorrows ordinance] 6 Ordinance  
 —6 giv'n] 6 given cordiall] 6 Cordial exhilarating] 2 exhilaring  
 6 Exhilarating cup] 6 Cup solace] 6 solace, —7 beare] 6  
 bear Questionlesse] 2, 3, 4, 5 questionlesse 6 Questionless —8  
 hardheartednesse] 6 hardheartedness undivorting] 3, 4, 5, 6 undi-  
 vorcing, —9 Jewes] 6 Jews, —10 doctrine] 4, 5, 6 Doctrine  
 —11 therfore] NOT IN 1. 4, 5, 6 therefore law] 6 Law —12  
 giv'n] 6 given originall] 1, 6 original —13 equall] 1, 6 equal  
 —15 needfull] 6 needful and] 1 & wherewith] 6 wherewith  
 himselfe] 1, 6 himself —17 rashnesse] 1 rashnes 6 rashness  
 meanes] 1, 6 means —18 chast] 6 chaste —19 perform] 4,  
 5 performe —20 we] 1 wee obay] 6 obey —21 experience]  
 6 Experience —23 wherein] 4, 5, 6 wherein we] 1 wee  
 —24 strength,] 6 strength of] NOT IN 1. nor] 4, 5, 6 or —25  
 natural] 1, 4, 5 naturall onely] 1, 6 only marriage] 1 mariage  
 ruins,] 4, 5 ruins —26 doubtlesse] 1 doubtles 6 doubtless  
 ordinance] 6 Ordinance —27 nor] 6 not alwayes] 1, 6 always  
 mis-choosing] 6 mischusing being] 1 beeing —28 wisdom] 4,  
 5 wisdom  
 PAGE 462

—1 therfore] 4, 5, 6 therefore perverse] 1 pervers opinion] 6  
 Opinion —2 continu'd] 6 continued despite] 1, 6 despight  
 nature] 6 Nature reason] 6 Reason —3 truly] 6 so truly  
 joyn'd] 1, 6 joynd expositers] 6 Expositers —4 Matthew] 1

*Mat.* 4, 5 *Mathew* confesse] 6 confess —5 wherein] 4, 5, 6 wherein —6 place;] 1 place, comming] 1, 6 coming divorce,] 4, 5 divorce; 6 Divorce, —7 least] 1 lest kingdom] 4, 5 Kingdome 6 Kingdom heav'n] 6 Heaven —9 between] 4, 5 betweene —11-12 *law*] 6 *Law divorce*] 6 *Divorce bee*] 4, 5, 6 *be* —15 Christ,] 1 Christ *Mark*] 1 *Mark.* translations] 6 Translations —16 authority] 6 Authority —17 *Malach.*] 6 *Mal.* anciently] 4, 5, 6 ancient —18 Besides] 6 Besides, divorce,] 1, 4, 5 divorce —18-19 and . . . mention'd,] NOT IN 1. bee] 1, 6 be and] 1 & legall] 1, 6 legal —21 shal] 1, 4, 5, 6 shall law] 1, 6 Law —22 punishment,] 1, 6 punishment forbidding;] 1 forbidding, 6 forbidding: —23 reprov'd] 4, 5 reprov'd

## PAGE 463

—1 onely] 1 only husband] 6 Husband —2 marriage] 4, 5 marriage 6 Marriage els] 6 else defiling] 1 *defiling* —3 forbidd'n] 1, 6 forbidden sav'd] 6 saved —4 law;] 6 Law: —5 justice] 6 Justice sinne] 1, 6 sin —6 hainous] 6 heinous Law,] 1, 6 Law onely] 1 only —7 wip't] 6 whipp'd implicit] 6 implicate touch] 6 touch, —8 and] 1 & be] 4, 5 he —9 mariages] 4, 5 marriages 6 Marriages yeares] 6 years —10 them;] 6 them: 'tis] 1 tis —11 assum'd] 6 assumed —12 nature] 6 Nature —13 stil] 1, 4, 5, 6 still ev'n] 6 even —14 giv'n us] 6 given to us forbi'd'n] 6 forbidden —15 *divorce*] 6 *Divorce* —16 *Institution*] 4, 5 *institution* —17 approv'd. So] 1 approv'd, so —18 over-masterd] 1 over masterd 6 overmaster'd law] 4, 5, 6 word —20 crookednesse] 1 crookednes 6 crookedness —22 bin] 6 been —23 silenc't, unlesse] 6 silenc'd, unless —24-p. 465, l. 18 But . . . read of.] NOT IN 1. But] 2, 3 but excusers] 6 Excusers

## PAGE 464

—2 doth,] 6 doth; —3 just] 4, 5 just, hee doe] 6 he do Sorceresse] 6 Soceress —4 owne evill] 6 own evil lookt] 6 look'd —5 that;] 6 that: opinion] 6 Opinion *Plato* in *Protagoras*] 4, 5 *Plato Protagoras* 6 *Plato's Protagoras*, —6 dialogues] 6 Dialogues proverbiall sentence] 6 Proverbial Sentence —7 *Greeks*] 4, 5 *Greekes* no] 6 *No willingly*;] 4, 5 *willingly*: 6 *willingly*. which] 6 Which —8, 10 doe] 4, 5, 6 do —9 thank] 4, 5 thanke —11 hee] 6 he sinne] 6 sin —12 the Shepheard] 4, 5 and Shepheard 6 and Shepherd people] 6 people, —13 law] 6 Law &] 4, 5, 6 and judgment] 4, 5 judgement 6

Judgment —14 obstinacie] 6 obstinacy heard] 6 heart un-  
 Judge-like,] 4, 5 un-Judge-like —15 un-Magistrate-like] 6 un  
 Magistrate-like warre] 6 War un-commander-like] 6 un-Com-  
 mander-like —16 Roman] 6 *Roman* —17 *Brutus*] 6 *Brutus*,  
 —18 enough] 6 enough poore] 6 poor —23 warre] 6 War  
 matchlesse Generalls] 6 matchless Generals —24 rashnes] 6 rash-  
 ness —25 Captains] 4, 5 Captaines confederates] 6 Confederates,  
 —27 the] 6 their farre] 6 far civill] 6 civil —28 speak] 4,  
 5 speake sinne] 6 sin againe] 4, 5, 6 again

## PAGE 465

—1 *Eli*] 4, 5, 6 *Eli*; heavie] 6 heavy found] 2 fonnd —2  
 between] 4, 5 betweene —3 hardnesse] 6 hardness any] 6 an  
 —4 Hee] 6 He —5 washt] 6 wash'd —6 yeeld] 6 yield  
 —7 plebeians] 6 Plebeans importuning] 2 imortuning —8 and]  
 3 & unto] 4, 5 ev'n to 6 even to fear] 4, 5 feare revolt.] 4, 5  
 revolt, —9 *Pilat*] 6 *Pilat* —10 unwillingnesse] 6 unwilling-  
 ness —11 Nation,] 4, 5 Nation; —13 beleeve] 6 believe  
 —14 uncleannesse] 6 uncleanness —15 against law] 6 against  
 law, —16 cruell] 6 cruel unclean] 4, 5 uncleane —17  
 daily] 4, 5 dayly —18 wee] 6 we —19 And can wee con-  
 ceive] 1 Can wee conceive NO PARAGRAPH. majesty] 4, 5, 6  
 Majesty —20 holines] 6 Holiness —21 stubborn] 4, 5  
 stubborne practise] 1, 6 practice —22 abstain] 4, 5 abstaine  
 —23 plain] 4, 5 plaine —26 individual] 4, 5 individuall

## PAGE 466

—1 bears] 4, 5 beares —7 only] 4, 5, 6 onely —8 ap-  
 peare] 6 appear —9 we] 1, 4, 5 wee —10 instituted!] 4, 5  
 instituted. 6 instituted? —11 behove] 6 behoove sobernes]  
 4, 5 sobernesse 6 soberness —12 prescribes] 4, 5 prescriber  
 —14 *meer*] 4, 5 *meere* judicial] 6 *Judicial* —17 moral] 1  
 moral, 6 Moral judicial] 6 Judicial —18 not abrogated,] 2,  
 3 abrogated, 1 was not abrogated 6 not abrogated judicial:] 1  
 judicial; 4, 5 judicill: 6 Judicial; —19 ministry] 6 Min-  
 istry deal] 1 deale —21 general] 4, 5 generall and] 1 &  
 —22 divorce] 6 Divorce —23 Laws,] 1, 6 Laws promis'd] 4,  
 5 prmis'd 6 premis'd —24 traditions:] 1 traditions. —24-  
 p. 467, l. 4 which . . . divorce.] NOT IN 1.

## PAGE 467

—1 16.] 4, 5, 6 16 —2 immediatly] 6 immediately —3  
 the] 4, 5, 6 OMIT. toucht,] 6 touch'd —4 divorce] 6 Divorce  
 31. vers. of *Mat.* the 5.] 1 31. *ver.* of *Mat.* the 5. 4, 5 31. verse of

*Mat.* the 5, 6 31 verse of *Mat.* 5. —5 licencious Glosse] 6  
 licentious Gloss —6 traduc't] 6 traduc'd therfore] 4, 5, 6 there-  
 fore —7 disallow'd] 6 disallowed condemn'd] 6 condemned  
 —8 *Moses*;] 6 *Moses*, —9 bin foulely] 6 been foully servant]  
 6 Servant —10, 13 bin] 6 been only] 4, 5, 6 onely —11  
 cease,] 3 cease; 4, 5, 6 cease: —12 civilizing] 6 civillizing  
 reproof] 1 reproof —13 Pharises] 1 Pharises, 4, 5, 6 Pharisees,  
 ev'n] 6 even who] 4, 5 what 6 that —14, 15, 20 judicial]  
 6 Judicial civil] 4, 5 civil 6 Civil —15 lesse] 6 less Com-  
 mandements;] 6 Commandments: —16 antiquaries] 6 Antiquaries  
 affirm] 4, 5 affirme 6 affirm, divorces] 6 Divorces Jews] 1 *Jews*  
 —17 only] 6 onely hands] 6 Hands —18 seales] 6 Seals  
 Rabbies] 6 Rabbi's —19-23 *Perkins* . . . Common-wealth.] NOT  
 IN 1. —19 in a] 6 *in a* —20 Christian. And] 6 Christian:  
 and this] 3, 4, 5 this, 2. wayes.] 4, 5 2 wayes 6 two ways;  
 —22 decree.] 4, 5 decree, 6 Decree: —23 family, Church or  
 Common-wealth] 6 Family, Church, or Commonwealth This ther-  
 fore is] 1 And it was indeed 4, 5, 6 This therefore is —24 *eco-*  
*nomical*] 2 *econimical* 6 *æconomical* —25 clear] 4, 5 cleere  
 reason,] 4, 5 reason. —26 determin'd] 6 determined —27  
 conscience;] 1 conscience. —27-p. 468, l. 2 not only . . . Com-  
 mon-wealth.] NOT IN 1. —28 Nation;] 4, 5 nation; 6 Nation:  
 wherof] 3, 4, 5 wherof, 6 whereof,

PAGE 468

—1 hurtfull] 6 hurtful —2 house] 6 House Church] 6  
 Church, Common-wealth] 6 Commonwealth —3 master] 6  
 Master family] 6 a Family —4 rectify'd only] 6 rectified onely  
 home;] 1 home, —6 Court-leet] 6 Court leet —7 fill'd] 1  
 fil'd —8 judicial] 4, 5 judiciall —9 lesse] 6 less moral]  
 4, 5 morall conversant,] 6 conversant —10 is,] 6 is —11  
 heer] 6 here —12 morality] 4, 5, 6 mortality divorce] 6 Di-  
 vorce adultery] 6 Adultery therfore] 4, 5, 6 therefore —13  
 law] 6 Law —14 therof;] 4, 5, 6 thereof, imagine] 6 imagine,  
 cov'nant] 1 covnant 6 Covenant grace] 6 Grace —15 reform]  
 4, 5 reforme law] 6 Law works] 6 Works eternal] 4, 5 eternall  
 —17 therof] 4, 5, 6 thereof —18 *opinion*,] 4, 5 *opinion* 6  
*Opinion* divorce] 6 *Divorce* —19 *Ægypt*] 6 *Ægypt* *Moses*] 6  
*Moses* —22 licence] 6 license giv'n] 6 given —23 *Egypt*] 6  
*Ægypt* Custom] 4, 5 custome —24 dispensation] 6 Dispen-  
 sation

## PAGE 469

—1 universal] 4, 5 universall —1, 2 dispensation] 6 Dispensation  
 over-dated] 6 over dated —3 unlawfull,] 6 unlawful encrease]  
 4, 5, 6 increase hardnes] 4, 5 hardnesse 6 hardness —4 and]  
 1 but 6 & —5 reproach] 4, 5 reproch allowance] 6 Allowance  
 —6 opinions] 6 Opinions —7 we] 1 wee —9 rebuke] 4, 5,  
 6 rebukes allows] 4, 5 allowes —10 think] 4, 5 thinke Moses]  
 1, 6 *Moses* —11 Jewish] 6 *Jewish* compell] 6 compel —12  
 rule] 4, 5 word 6 Word and] 1 & own] 4, 5 owne —13  
 judgement, doubtles] 6 judgment, doubtless —14 driv'n] 6 driven  
 —15 mind] 1 minde —16 touch-stone] 6 Touchstone sin] 4,  
 5 sinne must] 6 and must —17 intermixt] 6 intermix'd indul-  
 gences] 6 Indulgences looses] 6 loses —18 has,] 6 has  
 —19 all the Jews] 1 all the *Jews* 4, 5 the *Jewes* 6 the *Jews*  
 —19, 20 connivence] 6 Connivence —20 Moses] 1, 6 *Moses*,  
 —21 institution] 6 Institution —22 sword] 6 Sword —23 to,]  
 4, 5 to Genesis] 1, 6 *Genesis* —24 marriage] 4, 5 marriage 6  
 Marriage —26 conceiv'd] 1 conceav'd 6 conceived —27 it;]  
 6 it,

## PAGE 470

—1 chap.] 6 Chapter *Matth.*] 1 *Mat.* 6 *Matthew* plainly,] 1  
 plainly —2 heer] 6 here glosses] 6 Glosses —4 something]  
 6 something law] 6 Law —7 owne] 1, 4, 5, 6 own infer-  
 ence,] 6 inference —8 divorces] 6 Divorces adultery] 6  
 Adultery therefore] 1 therfore —10, 20, 27 divorce] 6  
 Divorce look also] 6 also look —11 first] 6 omits. institu-  
 tion] 6 Institution —12 should] 6 shall —14 sinfull] 6  
 sinful unlawfull] 6 unlawful —14 Law,] 1 Law; himselfe]  
 1, 4, 5, 6 himself —15 maker;] 6 Maker, strength,] 6 strength  
 —16 wonderfull] 6 wonderful —17 decrees] 6 Decrees marriage]  
 6 Marriage —18 institution] 6 Institution dissuade] 6 dissuade  
 divorcing;] 6 divorcing, —19 sinnes] 1, 4, 5, 6 sins hardnesse]  
 1 hardnes 6 hardness —21 passe] 6 pass unrepov'd] 4, 5, 6  
 unproved —22 This] 1 NO PARAGRAPH. bee] 1, 4, 5, 6 be  
 marvell'd] 1 marvell'd at 4, 5, 6 marvelled —23 suffer'd] 4, 5,  
 6 suffered therupon] 6 thereupon —24 usury] 6 Usury stews]  
 6 Stews and here] 1 & heer —25 adultery] 6 Adultery bee]  
 1, 4, 5, 6 be —25-26 punisht] 6 punished hard hearted] 1  
 hard-hearted *Jewes*] 1, 6 *Jews* 4, 5 *Jews* wee] 4, 5, 6 we  
 —28 and] 4, 5 &

## PAGE 471

—1 usury] 1 usury, 6 Usury —2 embroile] 6 embroyl all-wise] 1 all wise —3 Judgements] 1 judgements 6 Judgments Statutes] 1 statutes —4 we] 1 wee —7 and] 4, 5 & Law] 1 law —8 herselfe] 1, 4, 5, 6 her self —9 impartial] 1, 6 impartial —10 decrees] 6 Decrees —11 selfe] 1, 4, 5, 6 self adulteries,] 6 Adulteries *opinion*] 6 *Opinion sinne*] 4, 5, 6 *sin Apostolick*] 4, 5 *apostolick law*,] 6 *Law* —14 *sound*] 2, 3 *souud* —15 *opinion*] 6 *Opinion is*] 6 *is*, —15, 16 *Law*] 1 *law* —15-16 but . . . *Matchiavel's*,] 6 (but . . . *Matchiavel's*) —17 bear] 2, 3 ear 1 bear 4, 5, 6 hear —19 ceremoniall] 1 ceremonial 6 Ceremonial —19, 23 *sinne*] 1, 4, 5, 6 *sin* —20, 24 *law*] 6 *Law* —20 fall] 6 fail —23 straiten 6 streighten —24 Judiciall] 1 judicial 6 Judicial —25 bee] 1, 4, 5, 6 be protector] 6 Protector champion] 6 Champion

## PAGE 472

—1 civility] 6 Civility plainly,] 1, 6 plainly 4, 5 painly —2 arm] 1 arme morall] 1 moral 6 Moral law] 6 Law —2, 3 justice] 1 Justice —3 vertue: their] 6 vertue. Their —4 steers] 1 steares cours] 6 course —6 if] 4, 5 it dispensations] 6 Dispensations uncleannesse] 6 uncleanness —7 relaxe] 6 relax bee] 1, 4, 5, 6 be —8 Papal] 1 papal stews] 6 Stews —9 whordom] 6 whoredom —10 wherof] 6 whereof —11 usury] 1 usury, 6 Usury, —12 alleg'd] 6 alleged —13 usury] 6 Usury —15 word] 6 Word —16 been] 4, 5 bin discus't] 6 discuss'd —17 judgement] 6 judgment therefore] 1 therefore —18 wherein] 1 wherin civill] 1, 6 civil policy] 4, 5 policie —19 wickednes] 6 wickedness law] 6 Law and] 1 & lawfull] 4, 5, 6 lawful —20 lawlesse] 6 lawless —21 Physick,] 6 Physick wil] 1, 4, 5, 6 will —22 policie:] 1 polity: 6 Policy, pulses] 6 Pulses —23 order,] 6 order worse] 1 wors inordinat] 1, 6 inordinate —24 bee] 1, 4, 5, 6 be —25 that] 1 which —26 cours] 6 course perill] 1, 6 peril priviledge] 6 privilege —27 implicit] 6 implicate —28 fearlesse] 1 fearles 6 fearless

## PAGE 473

—1 The] NO PARAGRAPH IN 1. political] 4, 5 politicall law] 6 Law Restraine] 1 restraine —2 it,] 6 it out: but] 6 out. But —3 height] 1 hight —4 pretext] 2, 3 petext —5-p. 474, l. 15 Let . . . down] NOT IN 1. —5 therefore] 6 therefore —6 hurtfull] 6 hurtful Common wealth] 4, 5 Common-wealth 6

Commonwealth —7 hardning] 3 hardening —8 fear'd] 4, 5, 6 feard —10, 12 lesse] 6 less —11 only] 6 onely —13 vertues,] 6 Vertues descending from her scepter'd royalty,] 6 (descending from her Sceptred Royalty) —14 conquering,] 6 conquering sin] 6 sin, —15 eternal] 4, 5 eternall rebel] 4, 5 rebell terms. Or] 6 terms? or —16 judicial] 4, 5 judicall 6 Judicial steward] 6 Steward —17 morall] 4, 5 morall —18 subtle] 6 subtile acquittances] 6 Acquittances him self] 4, 5, 6 himself —19 begging,] 6 begging? —20 itinerary] 6 Itinerary delinquents] 6 Delinquents —22 bench,] 6 Bench barre] 6 Bar Unlesse] 6 Unless —23 morall] 4, 5 morall 6 Moral judicial] 4, 5 judicall 6 Judicial —24 debtor Israelite] 6 Debtor *Israelite*, —25 seed] 6 Seed *Abraham*] 6 *Abraham*, bankrout] 6 bankrupt flatter'd] 6 flattered —26 insnaring discharges] 6 ensnaring Discharges —27 hal'd] 4, 5, 6 haled cruel] 4, 5 cruell —28 judicial] 4, 5 judicial 6 Judicial acquitments] 6 Acquitments ingaged] 6 engaged

## PAGE 474

—1 be,] 6 be Law] 6 Law, integrity] 4, 5 integritie faithfulness] 6 faithfulness —2 shamelesse] 6 shameless —4 correction] 6 correction, —5 Common wealth] 4, 5 Common-wealth 6 Commonwealth —7 gracefull] 6 graceful *legat*] 2, 3, 4, 5 *legal* 6 *Legat* —8 us'd] 4, 5, 6 used *Antiocus*] 6 *Antiochus* level] 4, 5 levell —9 vertu] 4, 5, 6 vertue straitest] 6 straightest —10 winding,] 6 winding —11 insurrection] 6 Insurrection —12 mend:] 6 mend; decree] 6 Decree —16 *divorce*] 6 *Divorce* *giv'n*] 6 *given* *wives only*] 6 *Wives onely* —18 as *Beza* and others say] 1 as he sayes —19 men] 6 Men *wives;*] 1 *wives*, 6 *Wives*; —20 only] 6 onely dispensation] 6 Dispensation mercifull Law:] 6 merciful Law, —21 being] 1 beeing —22 as needfull] 6 needful senslesse] 4, 5 senselesse 6 senseless —23—p. 476, l. 6 But . . . invented] NOT IN 1. —23 divorce] 6 Divorce —24 wives,] 6 Wives husbands] 6 Husbands

## PAGE 475

—1 manifest] 6 manifestly huddl'd] 6 huddled —2 hardness] 6 hardness —3 lessn'd] 4, 5, 6 lessen'd —3, 4 divorce] 6 Divorce only] 6 onely —5 wives] 6 Wives Who] 6 who —6 woman] 6 Woman man] 6 Man —7 husband] 6 Husband marriage] 6 marriage —8 wife.] 6 wife? —9 contended] 6 contented house-rule] 6 house rule —10 wisdom] 6 wisdom —11 something] 4, 5, 6 something pride.] 6 pride? —12 *not*]



6 not, Paul] 4, 5, 6 Paul authority] 6 authority —14 mortify'd]  
 6 mortified Salomon] 4, 5, 6 Solomon saith that] 6 saith, That  
 —15 husband,] 6 husband rottenness] 6 rottenness continual] 2,  
 3 continual 4, 5 continuall dropping:] 6 dropping. —16  
 better] 6 Better a] 6 the wilderness] 6 wilderness, —17  
 Who so] 6 Whoso —18 four] 4, 5 four —20 as . . . similitudes,]  
 6 (as . . . similitudes) —21 colleague,] 6 colleague;  
 —22 wives] 6 wives —23 husband; is] 6 husband. Is —24  
 pitty] 6 pity wedlockt] 6 wedlock'd —25 another.] 6 another?  
 —26 cours] 6 course —27 Vashti] 2, 3, 4, 5 Vashti 6 Vashti  
 denial] 4, 5 denial

## PAGE 476

—1 wholsom] 6 wholesome beare] 4, 5, 6 bear —2 divine re-  
 later] 6 Divine Relater signe] 6 sign —3 he?] 6 he, —4  
 lesse mindfull] 6 less mindful preeminence] 6 pre-eminence DIVIDED  
 ON THE LINE. —5 man.] 6 man? —5, 27 divorce] 6 Divorce  
 —6 woman] 6 Woman man] 6 Man —7 therfore] 6 therefore  
 —7, 9, 16, 23, 26 law] 6 Law —8 dispensation] 6 Dispensation  
 —9 equall] 6 equal we] 1 wee word] 6 Word —11 shall]  
 6 shal —12 do] 1 doe —13 affirm,] 1 affirm —14 di-  
 vorce] 6 Divorce adultery] 6 Adultery —15 tak'n] 6 taken  
 —17 fundamental] 4, 5 fundamentall —18 superior] 6 superiour  
 charity] 1 charitie —19 ordinances] 6 Ordinances seals] 4, 5,  
 6 seal —20 equity,] 6 equity —24 recompenc't] 6 recom-  
 penc'd us'd,] 6 us'd —25 find] 1 finde wherfore] 6 where-  
 fore Pharises] 6 Pharisees —26 institution] 6 Institution  
 —27 altering] 4, 5 altring

## PAGE 477

—2 cited,] 6 cited natural] 4, 5 natural —3 Law] 1 law  
 —4 goe] 4, 5, 6 go sophistry unconvinc't] 6 Sophistry unconvinc'd  
 —5 bin] 6 been else] 1 els —6 tak'n] 6 taken —6, 8, 9  
 law] 6 Law —7 and] 1 & repells] 4, 5, 6 repels —8 Para-  
 dise] 1 paradise therby] 6 thereby —9 wherto] 6 whereto  
 —10 fal'n] 6 fallen man] 6 Man institution] 6 Institution  
 —11 wedlock, what ever] 6 wedlock whatever —12 perfect,] 6  
 perfect helpfull] 6 helpful comfortable,] 1, 6 comfortable —13  
 degree;] 1 degree, —14 equal] 4, 5 equall —15 reduc't] 6  
 reduc'd —16 cov'nant] 1 covenant 6 covenant —19 man]  
 6 Man —21 don] 6 done will] 1 wil —22 but] 1 but  
 only carnal] 4, 5 carnall —23 els] 6 else something] 6 some-  
 thing it:] 6 it; —24 And inferrs] 6 and infers

## PAGE 478

—1 amity;] 6 amity: —2 correspondence] 6 Correspondent  
 minde] 6 mind —3 nay] 6 nay, being] 1 beeing carcasses]  
 6 carcasses —4 or] 6 or, happ'n] 6 happen —5 soule] 4, 5,  
 6 soul —6 tyrant *Mezentius*;] 6 Tyrant *Mezentius*, receiv'd]  
 1 receav'd 6 received —7, 8 loneliness] 1 loneliness 6 loneli-  
 ness we] 1 wee —9 mind;] 4, 5, 6 mind, —11 unlesse]  
 6 unless nature] 6 a nature measure] 4, 5, 6 nature —12-p.  
 479, l. 8 The . . . enlargement.] NOT IN 1. —12 therefore] 6  
 thereof —14 mother] 6 mother, —15 deer] 6 dear unnat-  
 ural] 4, 5 unnaturall —16 mariage] 6 Marriage ev'n] 6 even  
 —17 whatsoever: next] 6 whatsoever. Next —20 ciment] 6 ce-  
 ment —22 little] 6 little, wee] 4, 5, 6 we —23 solecisme] 6  
 Solecism —24 rushlesse] 6 rushless ordinance] 6 Ordinance  
 marriage] 4, 5 mariage 6 Marriage if] 6 in —25 blockt] 6  
 block'd owne] 4, 5, 6 own —27 affirme] 4, 5, 6 affirm divorce]  
 6 Divorce —28 onely] 4, 5 only text] 6 Text

## PAGE 479

—1 bindes] 4, 5, 6 binds women] 6 Women men] 6 Men  
 onely] 4, 5 only —1, 4, 6 marvell] 6 marvel —2 sister to  
*Herod*,] 6 (sister to *Herod*) writ] 6 Writ ease] 6 Ease *Costo-*  
*barus*] 6 *Castobarus* —3 husband;] 6 Husband, which, as . .  
 attests,] 6 which (as . . . attests) lawfull] 6 lawful —4 onely]  
 4, 5, 6 only men] 6 Men sister] 6 Sister —5 threat'n'd] 6  
 threatned Earle *Constantius*,] Earl *Constantius* triviall cause] 6  
 trivial cause, —7 letters] 6 Letters palisadoes] 6 Palisadoes,  
 —9 himselfe] 1, 4, 5, 6 himself tells] 1 tells us 4, 5 tels —9,  
 12 bee] 1, 4, 5, 6 be —13 surely,] 1 surely; concurre] 4, 5, 6  
 concur —14 lewdest ends. Or] 1 leudest ends, or Church rites]  
 1 Church-rites 4, 5 Churches rites 6 Churches Rites finisht] 6  
 finish'd —15 efficacie] 1, 6 efficacy —16 fitness] 1 fitness  
 6 fitness Perhaps,] 1, 6 Perhaps carnall] 1, 6 carnal —17  
 Least] 1 lest all;] 1 all: —18 law] 6 Law nature] 6 Nature  
 joyn:] 1 joyn; tis] 6 'tis then,] 6 then —19 dispos'd,] 6  
 disposed enabl'd] 6 enabled cheerfull] 1 cherfull 6 cheerful  
 —21 promis'd] 6 promised —22 matrimony] 6 Matrimony  
 —23 onely] 1, 4, 5 only —24 bee] 1, 4, 5, 6 be his] 1 of his  
 —25 witnesseth,] 1, 6 witnesseth mariage] 6 Marriage —26  
*call'd*] 6 *called* doubtlesse] 1 doubtles 6 doubtless —26, 27  
 hee] 1, 4, 5, 6 he —27 rest] 6 rest, —28 deadnesse] 1 dead-  
 nes 6 deadness something] 1, 4, 5 something

## PAGE 480

—1 distastfull] 6 distasteful and averse] 1 & avers nature] 6 Nature —2 unconjugall] 2, 3, 4, 5 conjugall 1 unconjugal 6 conjugal joyn'd,] 1 joyn'd; 4, 5, 6 joyn'd, —3 ordinance] 6 Ordinance —4 joynd] 6 joyn'd —5 unjoyning,] 1 unjoyning; —6 sobrest] 1 soberest being] 1 beeing —8 divorc't] 6 divorc'd —9 unconjunctive] 1 unconjunctive, unmarriageable] 6 unmarriageable —10 frowardnesse] 1 frowardnes 6 frowardness hath] 1 have —11 being] 1 beeing marriage] 6 Marriage —12 man] 6 Man —13 matter;] 6 matter: peacefull divorce] 6 peaceful Divorce —14, 16 lesse] 6 less evill] 1, 6 evil scandall] 1, 6 scandal hatefull] 4, 5, 6 hateful hardhearted] 1 hardhearted —15 marriage] 6 Marriage judgement] 6 judgment —16 Moses] 1 Moses, 4, 5, 6 Moses choosing] 4, 5, 6 chusing —17 evill] 1, 4, 5, 6 evil and] 1 & civill] 1, 6 civil —18 law] 6 Law Gospell] 1, 4, 5, 6 Gospel —19 legall] 1, 6 legal wee] 4, 5, 6 we Expositors.] 6 Expositors? —21 sentence] 6 Sentence divorce] 6 Divorce —22 observ'd] 6 observed additions] 6 Additions —23 unfolded] 1 unfoulded reasons] 6 Reasons —24 wherewith] 1 wherewith Christ, as . . . was,] 6 Christ (as . . . was) —25 Pharises] 6 Pharisees him,] 6 him

## PAGE 481

—1 sentence] 6 Sentence selfe] 1, 4, 5, 6 self that now] 4, 5, 6 now that follows;] 6 follows, —3 therfore] 6 therefore —4 generall] 1, 4, 5, 6 general —5 me,] 6 me —6 annotations] 6 Annotations —7 adultery] 6 Adultery —8, 9 only] 6 onely frequent,] 1, 6 frequent —9 Laws,] 6 Laws expresse] 6 express —10 wherby] 6 whereby plea:] 6 plea, —11 20,] 1, 2, 3, 4, 5 20. maxims] 6 Maxims —12 civil] 6 Civil shews] 6 shews, ev'n] 6 even penal laws,] 6 Penal Laws —13 Lawes] 1 laws 4, 5, 6 Laws —15 hee] 1, 4, 5, 6 he destroyes] 1, 4, 5, 6 destroys —16 answers,] 1 answers marriage] 6 Marriage —17 ordaind] 1, 4, 5, 6 ordain'd mutuall] 1, 6 mutual —18 life;] 6 life: —19, 20, 21 wee] 4, 5, 6 we —19 finde] 4, 5, 6 find —20 charity:] 6 charity; —21 so be] 6 be so bee] 1, 4, 5, 6 be cruell] 1, 6 cruel —22 appeares] 1, 4, 5, 6 appears Marke,] 1, 6 Mark Luke,] 1 Luke S.] St. —23 Cor.] 4, 5 Corin. 6 Corinthians, Christ,] 6 Christ —24 exception:] 1 exception; naturall equity,] 1, 6 natural equity —25 generall] 1, 6 general bee] 1, 4, 5, 6 be —26 therfore] 6 therefore —27 lesse] 6 less farre] 6 far hence,] 6 hence

## PAGE 482

—1 a man] 1 man —2 bee] 1, 4, 5, 6 be supernaturall] 1, 6 supernatural —3 us] 1 us, we] 1 wee now are:] 2, 3, 4, 5 now are 1 now are: 6 are bin] 6 been —4 Jews] 1, 6 *Jews* civill] 1, 6 civil nation] 1, 6 Nation —5 pres't] 4, 5 prest 6 press'd so;] 6 so, law] 6 law wherby] 6 whereby —6 when as] 1, 6 whenas naturall] 1, 6 natural —7 ancier,] 6 ancier ingrav'n] 6 ingraven —8 blameles] 6 blameless therfore] 6 therefore —9 Law-giver] 6 Lawgiver Moses] 1, 4, 5, 6 *Moses* specify'd] 4, 5, 6 specified —10 allow'd] 4, 5, 6 allowed —11 volume] 6 volum law] 6 Law ev'n] 4, 5, 6 even vanisht] 6 vanish'd —13 only] 6 onely infinit] 6 infinite —14 call'd] 4, 5, 6 called —15 *commandement*] 1, 4, 5 *Commandement* 6 *commandment* S. John;] 1 St. John; 6 S. John, —16 It] 6 it —18 therfore] 6 therefore self cruelty] 1 self-cruelty —20 and] 1 & —21 Christianity,] 1 Christianity; —22 command,] 6 command —23 tak'n] 6 taken we] 1 wee sence] 1, 6 sense —26 only] 4, 5, 6 onely dislike,] 4, 5 dislike —27 mind] 1, 6 mind, Hebrew] 6 *Hebrew* —28 himselfe] 1, 6 himself

## PAGE 483

—1 divorce,] 1 divorce; therby] 4, 5, 6 thereby wherin] 4, 5, 6 wherein —2 Law] 1 law —3 Pharises depraving,] 6 Pharisees depraving —4 therfore] 4, 5, 6 therefore halted,] 6 halted —5 law] 6 Law —8 reconcileable] 1 reconciliable 6 reconcilable offence, except fornication,] 4, 5 offence except fornication, 6 offence (except fornication) —9 divorce: he] 6 Divorce. He here] 1 heer —10 hindrances] 4, 5 hinderances Whether in body or mind,] NOT IN 1. —11 mind] 4, 5, 6 in mind remov'd:] 6 remov'd; such,] 6 such —13 reconcilement] 1 reconcilement, amendment;] 1 amendment. 6 amendment: —13-27 they . . . fornication.] NOT IN 1. —14 do] 4, 5 doe marriage] 6 marriage —15 adultery] 6 Adultery —16 alwaies] 4, 5 alwayes 6 always incidental] 2, 3, 4, 5 indicental —17 inferre] 6 infer all] 4, 5, 6 OMIT. —18 helpfulness] 4, 5 helpfulness 6 helpfulness past,] 6 past —20 distasts] 6 distastes *findes*] 6 *finds* matrimony] 6 Matrimony —21 intermitted,] 4, 5 intermitted —22 perpetuall] 6 perpetual solitude,] 6 solitude —24 therfore] 6 therefore divorce] 6 Divorce —24, 26 only] 4, 5, 6 onely —25 adultery] 6 Adultery —26 lesse] 6 less —27 fornication] 6 Fornication Law here plainly con-

firm'd,] 1 law heer solidly confirm'd; —28 permitted,] 6 permitted

## PAGE 484

—1 place] 1, 4, 5 place, also by no lesse an Author] 4, 5 by no other an Author 6 by no other Author —2 S.] 1 St. himself] 4, 5 himselfe —3 text] 6 Text agree] 1 agree, only] 4, 5, 6 onely —4 *wives*] 6 *wifes* —5 *husband,*] 4, 5 *husband* —6 chiefly] 1 only reconcilement;] 4, 5 reconcilement: —8 divorce] 6 Divorce fornication] 6 Fornication —8-p. 486, l. 22 And . . . carver] NOT IN 1. —9, 11, 14, 17 law] 6 Law —11 Judicial] 6 Judicial —12 Judaicall] 6 Judaical —13 abolishing] 6 abolishing, —14 themselves,] 6 themselves: —15 divorce] 6 Divorce adultery] 6 Adultery —17 wisdom] 4, 5 wisdom —18 mark] 6 mark, adultery,] 6 Adultery —19 marriage] 6 Marriage —20 malice,] 4, 5 malice; —22 therefore] 4, 5, 6 therefore dissuade] 6 dissuade —23 natural] 4, 5 naturall hatred] 6 hatred, whenever] 4, 5 when ever —24 marriage,] 6 Marriage adultery] 6 Adultery —25 yet] 2, 3 yer —26 will] 6 Will —27 spleen] 6 Spleen understanding] 6 Understanding —28 sanguifie] 2, 3 sauguifie

## PAGE 485

—2 marriage] 6 Marriage somewhat] 4, 5, 6 somewhat —3 lesse] 6 less —4 is,] 6 is —5 hel] 4, 5 hell 6 Hell —6 heav'n] 6 Heaven —7 naturall] 6 natural matrimony] 6 Matrimony —8 unlesse] 6 unless enough,] 4, 5 enough 6 enough enough] 6 enough —10 disesteem] 4, 5 disesteeme —13 divorce] 6 Divorce —14 means] 4, 5 meanes —15 ballancing] 6 balancing casual] 6 casual —16 soon] 4, 5 soone —17 trespasse] 6 trespass —18 and] 2, 3 and and offence,] 4, 5 offence —19 wherof] 4, 5, 6 whereof —20 divorce] 6 Divorce all;] 6 all, —21 like the word of God,] 6 (like the Word of God) —22 tempests] 4, 5 tempest stilnesse] 6 stilness peacefull] 6 peaceful —23 us,] 2, 3, 4, 5 us. 6 us —24 imbezzl'd] 6 imbezelled —27 blamelesse] 2, 3 blameless 6 blameless literall] 6 literal —28 decrees] 6 Decrees

## PAGE 486

—1 atome] 6 atom unhelpfull] 6 unhelpful —2 think] 4, 5 thinke bee] 6 be —3 precisely] 2, 3 precirely forbidd'n,] 6 forbidden —5 *law*] 6 *Law* Gospel] 6 Law —7 hee] 6 he concupiscence,] 6 concupiscence —8 goe] 6 go novice] 6 Novice —10, 14 himselfe] 6 himself —11, down-right] 6

downright bind] 6 blind —13 canon] 6 Canon tis] 6 'tis  
 whordom] 4, 5 whooredome 6 whoredom —16 wait] 6 weight  
 gravity,] 6 gravity —17 pretious literalism] 6 precious Literalism  
 —18 entreat] 6 intreat 19.] 4, 5, 6 19 *Math.*] 6 *Matth.* —19  
 sayes] 6 says, —20 *kingdom*] 4, 5, 6 *Kingdom heavens*] 4, 5 *heavens*  
 6 *Heavens* —21 knife] 6 Knife doe] 6 do —22 carver]  
 6 Carver —23 *words*] 4, 5, 6 *word only*] 6 *onely* —24  
*divorce*] 6 *Divorce* —25 Grotius] 6 Grotius,

PAGE 487

—1 we] 1 wee Judicial] 1 judicial 6 Judicial —2 Law]  
 1 law —3 wil] 1, 4, 5, 6 will —4 done] 1 don diligently,]  
 6 diligently —5 heer] 1 heer 4, 5 heere 6 here actual] 1,  
 4, 5, 6 actual fornication,] 6 fornication —6 witnes,] 6 witness  
 divorce,] 1 divorce; 6 Divorce, cannon] 1, 6 Canon 4, 5 canon  
 law] 1, 6 Law —7 judges,] 6 judges Nevertheless] 1 Never-  
 thelesse, 6 Nevertheless —8 observ'd,] 6 observ'd Emperours,]  
 2, 3, 4, 5 Emperours. second,] 6 second —9 wisdom] 4, 5 wis-  
 dome —10 decreed] 1 decree'd bee] 1, 4, 5, 6 be —11  
 obstinately] 1, 6 obstinately —12 suspition] 1 suspicion 6 sus-  
 pitions adulterizing:] 1 adulterizing; 6 adulterizing, —13  
 wilfull] 6 wilful feasts] 4, 5 feast 6 Feasts invitations] 6 Invi-  
 tations —14 neer] 6 near —15 house] 1 hous Theaters]  
 6 Theatres —16 prevent] 1 prevent, —17 conception] 6  
 Conception —18 *suspected*,] 6 *suspected divorc't*,] 4, 5 *divorc't*,  
 6 *divorc'd*; —20 the] 6 a —21 els] 6 else hood-wink] 6  
 hoodwink law] 1, 6 Law —23 walk] 4, 5 walke middle way]  
 1 middle-way —24 prudent] 1 a prudent —26 notes] 6 Notes  
 fornication] 6 Fornication tak'n] 6 taken —28 husband:] 6  
 husband, it] 6 omits.

PAGE 488

—1 plaid] 1 playd whoor] 4, 5 whoore] 6 whore —3, 15  
 onely] 1 only stubbornesse] 1 stubbornnes 6 stubbornness —4  
*Kimchi*] 6 *Kimchi*, —5 glosse] 6 gloss text] 6 Text opinion.]  
 2, 3, 4, 5 opinion, —6 reasons,] 1 reasons bin] 6 been whoor-  
 dom] 4, 5 whoordome 6 whoredom Levit] 1, 4, 5, 6 Levite  
 —8 been] 1 bin 4, 5 beene whoordom,] 1 whoordom 4, 5  
 whoordome, 6 whoredome —9 to,] 6 to —10 Hebrew]  
 1 hebrew 6 *Hebrew* harlot] 6 Harlot —12 *Judges*] 1 *Judges*,  
 —13 husband,] 4, 5 husband —14 done] 1 don —15 onely]  
 1 only unchastly] 6 unchastely should] 4, 5, 6 would bee] 1, 4,  
 5, 6 be loath] 6 loth —17 adultery] 6 Adultery Neverthe-

lesse] 1 Nevertheless, 6 Nevertheless —18 signes] 6 signs  
 giv'n] 6 given —18, 27 law] 6 Law God,] 1 God *Numb.* 5.]  
 1, 6 *Numb.* 5. 4, 5 *Numb.* 5, —19 man] 1, 4, 5, 6 man, —20  
 Sanctuary] 4, 5 sanctuary uncover'd] 6 uncovered —21 false]  
 1 fals no;] 6 no, —22 rottenesse] 1 rottenesse, 6 rottenness  
 —23 unlesse] 6 unlesse —24 bin] 6 been guiltles] 4, 5 guilt-  
 lesse 6 guiltless —25 verse,] 1 *ver.* suspition] 1, 6 suspicion  
 he] 4, 5 hee —26 this] 4, 5, 6 his triall;] 1 trial, 4, 5, 6  
 trial; which] 1 which, —27 uncertain] 4, 5 uncertaine  
 effect, 6 effect

## PAGE 489

—1 demeanors] 4, 5 demeanours 6 demeanours, suspicion] 4, 5,  
 6 suspition —2 incurre] 6 incur divorce,] 1 divorce; 6 Di-  
 vorce, selfe] 1, 6 self —3 been] 1 bin —4 abominable,]  
 6 abominable —4, 15, 18, 21 bee] 1, 6 be —5 nicknam'd]  
 4, 5 nick-nam'd husband] 6 Husband aduultresse] 6 Adulteress  
 —5, 8 law] 6 Law —6 Law] 1 law —7 unskilfulnesse] 1  
 unskilfulnes 6 unskilfulness —10 Salomon] 6 Solomon him-  
 selfe] 1 himself 6 himself, judgement] 6 judgment —11 sur-  
 passe] 6 surpass acutenesse] 1 acutenes 6 acuteness —12 con-  
 fesses,] 1 confesses *Pro.* 30. 19. 20.] 1 *Prov.* 30. 19, 20. 6 *Pro.*  
 30. 19, 20. adultery,] 4, 5 adultery 6 Adultery —13 aire]  
 1, 6 air —14 ship] 6 Ship Sea:] 6 Sea; —15 indignities,]  
 6 indignities therfore] 4, 5, 6 therefore —16 anough] 4, 5, 6  
 enough us,] 1 us divorcive adultery] 6 Divorcive Adultery —17  
 alwayes] 1, 6 always —18 eye witnesse,] 1 eye-witnesse: 6 eye  
 witness, —19 adultery] 6 Adultery —20 presumption,] 1  
 presumption 6 presumption wherby] 4, 5, 6 whereby —21 bee]  
 1, 4, 5, 6 be don] 4, 5, 6 done —22 Fornication] 1, 6 *fornica-*  
*tion* —23 signifie] 1 signify matrimoniall] 1, 6 matrimonial  
 —24 covnant] 1 Covnant 4, 5 cov'nant 6 covenant actual] 1, 6  
 actual adultery] 6 Adultery —24-p. 490, l. 13 For . . . justice.]  
 NOT IN 1. sinne] 6 sin —25 divorce] 6 Divorce —26 ev'n]  
 6 even —27 tak'n] 6 taken law] 4, 5, 6 Law

## PAGE 490

—1 capitall] 6 capital divorce] 6 Divorce —2 bee] 4, 5, 6  
 be said] 6 said, businesse] 6 business criminall] 6 criminal  
 —3 civill] 6 Civil sinfull] 6 sinful barre] 6 Bar —4, 7 con-  
 science] 6 Conscience —5 triall] 6 trial law] 4, 5, 6 Law  
 —6 by] 4, 5, 6 OMIT. was] 6 have —7 conscience] 6 Con-  
 science wee] 6 we only] 4, 5, 6 onely —8 adultery] 6 Adul-

tery, selfe] 6 self —9 Law-giver] 6 Lawgiver —10 world]  
 6 world, adultery] 6 Adultery —11 Gentile] 6 Gentile,  
 —12 mortall] 4, 5, 6 mortal out-strip] 6 outstrip —13 justice]  
 6 Justice —14 addes] 6 adds —15 divorce] 6 Divorce  
*command,*] 4, 5, 6 *command* —16 rigor] 6 rigour —17 his]  
 4, 5, 6 *in little*] 4, 5 *little* 6 *little, mariages*] 6 *Marriages*  
 —18 *besides*] 4, 5 *besids idolatrous:*] 6 *Idolatrous. arguments*  
*therefore*] 6 *Arguments therefore* —19 *other:*] 6 *other. therefore*] 6  
 4, 5 *therefore* 6 *Therefore* —20 *himselfe*] 4, 5, 6 *himself*  
*adds,*] 6 *adds* —21 *wee*] 6 *we* —22 Gospel,] 6 Gospel  
 —23, 24 *bee*] 1, 6 *be distinctions,*] 6 *distinctions*

## PAGE 491

—1 continued] 1 continu'd —1-2 as . . . maister,] NOT IN 1.  
 as . . . it,] 6 (as . . . it) Rhetoritian] 6 Rhetorician —2 speaks]  
 4, 5 speakes maister] 6 Master —3 scattering] 1 scatters heav-  
 enly] 1 heavenly doctrine] 1 doctrin 6 Doctrine pearl] 1 pearle  
 6 Pearls heer] 4, 5 heere 6 here —4 skilfull] 6 skilful  
 gatherer,] 1 gatherer; —5 findes] 1 finds, 6 find —6 ordi-  
 nance] 6 Ordinance generall] 1, 6 general *analogie*] 1 *analogy*  
 6 analogy —7 doctrine] 6 Doctrine —8 bee] 1, 6 be  
 strange] 6 one riddles;] 6 riddle, and] 1 & —9 divorce] 6  
 Divorce frigidity] 6 Frigidity —10 here] 1 heer excepted]  
 4, 5, 6 accepted adultery] 6 Adultery —11, 26 S.] 1 St.  
 —12 authority,] 6 authority hee] 1, 6 he —14 Gospell;] 1, 6  
 Gospel, wherein] 4, 5, 6 wherein deserted,] 1 deserted —15  
 something lesse] 6 something less divorc't] 6 divorc'd —16 he]  
 4, 5 be leaves] 1 leavs furdur] 6 further —17 Christian] 1  
 christian determine] 1 determin —18 importance;] 6 impor-  
 tance, —20 cases,] 1 cases; *call'd*] 6 *called* —21 marriage]  
 4, 5 marriage 6 Marriage —22 Now] NO PARAGRAPH IN 1.  
 —23 onely] 1 only —24 hinder'd] 1 hinderd —25 mis-  
 yoking] 6 misyoking —26 religion] 6 Religion speciall] 1, 6  
 special —27 divorce,] 1 divorce 6 Divorce, —28 wherever]  
 4, 5 where ever 6 whereever

## PAGE 492

—1 ordinance] 6 Ordinance —2 thraldom;] 6 thraldom,  
 —3 coopt] 1 coop't 6 coop'd wedlock,] 6 wedlock —4 lone-  
 lines] 6 loneliness worse] 1 wors —5 being] 1 beeing els] 6 else  
 marriage] 1 marriage 6 Marriage such,] 6 such —6 forc't]  
 6 forc'd bruit] 1, 6 brute —7 desire:] 1 desire; souls] 6  
 Souls —8 intellectuall] 1, 6 intellectual —9 marriage-rites]



6 Marriage Rites enough] 2, 3 anough 6 enough imbase] 4, 5, 6  
 abase —10 spirit] 4, 5 Spirit —11 or, which is wors,] 4, 5 or,  
 which is worse, 6 or (which is worse) —12 leavs] 4, 5, 6 leaves  
 despairing] 6 despairing abject] 4, 5 object &] 1, 6 and hardn'd]  
 1 hard'n'd 6 hardned —13 condition] 1 condition, fal] 1, 4,  
 5, 6 fall —14 usefull] 6 useful mankind] 6 Mankind —15  
 himself] 4, 5 himselfe ordinance] 1 ordinances 6 Ordinance  
 —16 worship] 1 worship; 6 Worship, —17 and] 1 & Sab-  
 bath,] 1 Sabbath; —18 ill-knotted] 4, 5, 6 ill knotted mariage,]  
 1 mariage 6 Marriage —19 overcharg'd] 6 overcharged per-  
 severance.] 2, 3 perseverance, —20 Charity beleeveth] 6 charity  
 believeth —21 licence] 6 Licence —22 don] 6 done —23  
*this]* 4, 5, 6 *that* —24 *divorce:]* 6 *Divorce, licence]* 6 *Licence*  
 —25 *mariage]* 6 *Marriage fault]* 6 *faults* —26 *mans]* 6 *Mans*  
*laws]* 6 *Laws*

## PAGE 493

—3 it,] 6 it doe] 6 do hardnes] 4, 5 hardnesse 6 hardness  
 —4 and] 1 & law] 6 Law —5 suffer,] 1 suffer —6 sheep,]  
 1, 6 sheep —7 random] 4, 5 randome wildernes] 1 Wildernes  
 6 wilderness —8 thought] 6 thoughts hunder'd] 6 hundred  
 —9 daily] 4, 5 dayly worse liberties,] 1 wors liberties —11  
 giv'n] 6 given it,] 6 it —12, 13 beleeve] 6 believe —12  
 giv'n] 1 givn 6 given —13, 14 wherby] 4, 5, 6 whereby —14  
 law] 6 Law wee] 6 we law,] 1 law 6 Law, —15 charity,] 1  
 charity: divine hymne] 6 Divine Hymn St.] 6 S. —16 *Cor.]*  
*1 Cor. beleeveth]* 6 *believeth things:]* 6 *things;* —17 exposi-  
 tion] 6 Exposition —18 praise;] 1, 4, 5, 6 praise, —18, 20,  
 24 charity] 6 Charity —19 governesse] 6 governess beleefe]  
 1, 6 belief we] 1 wee —20 writt'n] 6 written —22 14,]  
 1, 6 14, tells] 1 tels —23 truth] 6 Truth —25 load-  
 starre] 1 loadstarre 6 Loadstar diligence] 2, 3 dililgence —26  
 trust, through . . . favour'd me,] 1 trust, through . . . favor'd me, 6  
 trust (through . . . favour'd me) —28 done] 1 don dayes] 1  
 daies 6 days work:] 4, 5 worke: 6 worke, ages] 6 Ages

## PAGE 494

—2 burdensom] 4, 5 burdensome &] 4, 5, 6 and remorseles]  
 6 remorseless tangl'd] 6 tangled —3 repugnances] 6 repugnanc-  
 ies between] 4, 5 betweene —4 other:] 6 other; hereby] 1  
 heerby tedious] 6 tedeous —6 decided,] 1, 6 decided sword]  
 6 Sword —7 charity] 6 Charity —8 Christendome] 1, 6  
 Christendom extreme] 1 extrem literalist] 6 Literalist —9,

15 and] 1 & —10 words:] 6 words; —11 advise,] 6 advise  
 —12 in stead] 6 instead canon law] 6 Canon Law —13 boisterous] 1 boistrous edicts] 6 Edicts ordinance] 6 Ordinance  
 —14 marriage] 4, 5 marriage 6 Marriage —15 giv'n] 6 given  
 —16 oft times] 1 oft-times uncleannesse] 6 uncleanness —17 self] 4, 5 selfe weary,] 1, 6 weary —18 lust,] 6 Lust uncontroll'd adulteries] 6 uncontrolled Adulteries —19 custom] 4, 5 custome 6 Custom wil] 1, 4, 5, 6 will —20 their] 1 thir timorous] 4, 5 timerous —21 tis] 6 'tis endure] 4, 5, 6 indure —23 sent.] 1, 4, 5 sent agree] 1 agree, tis true;] 6 'tis true, enjoyn'd] 6 enjoyed —24 withall] 1 withall, don] 4, 5, 6 done —25 on,] 6 on —26 sending,] 1 sending; least] 6 lest —27 we] 1 wee detain] 4, 5 detainee —28 which, as . . . notes,] 1 which as . . . notes, 6 which (as . . . notes)

## PAGE 495

—2 Therefore] 4, 5, 6 Therefore —2, 3 we] 1 wee —3 temptation,] 6 temptation; thither,] 6 thither —4 perilous] 6 perillous remedies,] 6 remedies —5 evils;] 6 evils, groans] 6 grones —6 acquit] 1 acquitt himselfe] 1, 6 himself ruin] 6 ruine —7 him,] 6 him suffer] 1 suffer, —8 fearfulness] 4, 5 fearfulness 6 fearfulness lawfull] 6 lawful feare] 6 fear —9 the] 4, 5, 6 of a opinion] 6 Opinion —10 said,] 1 said dismiss] 4, 5 dismissee —11 frigidity] 6 his frigidity it,] 1 it —12 this,] 6 this hear] 4, 5 heare —13 Angel] 4, 5 Angell warrant:] 6 warrant; —15 adulteresse,] 6 adultress say;] 6 say, —16 law] 6 Law —17, 21, 28 and] 1 & man] 6 Man leaves] 1 leavs him. For] 6 him; for —18 over-hard] 6 over hard —19 vertue] 6 Vertue —20 al] 1, 4, 5, 6 all &] 1, 4, 5, 6 and unconstrain'd] 4, 5 unconstrained 6 unconstrained *vertue*] 1 vertu 6 Vertue *bolt*] 1 bolt 6 Bolt —21 overshot,] 2, 3, 4, 5 over-shot —22 therefore] 4, 5, 6 therefore —23 reason] 6 Reason divorce] 6 Divorce —24 resolve] 1 resolv else] 1 els it,] 6 it letter-bound servility] 6 Letter-bound Servility —25 marriage] 6 Marriage —28 matrimony] 6 Matrimony

## PAGE 496

—1 conjugall] 1, 6 conjugal —2 Papists] 6 Papists, divorce] 6 Divorce —3 libertines] 6 Libertines uncleannesse] 6 uncleanness —4 designe] 6 design wedlock] 6 Wedlock supportlesse] 1 supportless 6 supportless yoke,] 6 yoke —5 inviolable:] 1 inviolable, 6 inviolable; —6 withall] 1 with all delighting, as . . . is,] 6 delighting (as . . . is) —7 afflictions,] 1 affliction; —8

## PAGE 501

—1, 7 therefore] 6 therefore —2 natural] 4, 5 naturall —1, 3 divorce] 6 Divorce —2 law] 4, 5, 6 Law —2, 4 nature] 6 Nature —2 goe] 4, 5, 6 go contrary,] 6 contrary; —3 only] 4, 5, 6 onely —4, 5 law] 6 Law —5 Next] 6 Next, NO PARAGRAPH IN 2, 3. remember'd] 6 remembered —6 may be] 2, 3 maybe —7 grosse] 6 gross —8 farre] 4, 5, 6 far —9, 12, 13 law] 6 Law only] 6 onely —10 perswasion] 6 persuasion —11 10th] 6 10th. —12 perswasive] 6 persuasive cumpulsive] 6 compulsive —13 divorce] 6 Divorce —14 prohibition] 6 Prohibition —15 evil] 4, 5 evill natures] 6 Natures resistlesse] 1 resistles 6 resistless bee] 1, 4, 5, 6 be —16 carelesse] 1 careles 6 careless selfe] 1, 4, 5, 6 self uselesse] 1 uses 6 useless —17 friend] 6 friends spiritlesse] 1 spiritles 6 spiritless Common-wealth] 6 Commonwealth —18 Moses] 1, 4, 5, 6 *Moses* Law-givers] 1, 6 Lawgivers —20 Parlament] 1, 4, 5, 6 Parliament Clergy] 1 *Clergy* England] 1, 6 *England* —21 the eighth] 1, 4, 5 *the* 8th 6 the 8th. —22 his] 1 *his* Queen Anne of Cleve] 1 *Q. Anne of Cleve* 4, 5 Queen Anne of Cleve 6 Queen Anne of Cleve —23 like] 1 like, —23, 25 been] 1 bin halfe a yeare] 1, 6 half a year 4, 5 half a yeer unlesse] 1 unles 6 unless —24 proverb] 1, 6 Proverb —25 vertue] 1 vertu doe.] 1, 4, 5 do. 6 do: —26 even] 1, 4, 5 ev'n freedome] 1, 6 freedom —27 himselfe] 1, 4, 5, 6 himself being] 1 beeing —28 Sex] 1, 6 sex therefore] 1, 4, 5 therfore

## PAGE 502

—1 forc't] 6 forc'd —2 heare] 1, 4, 5, 6 hear judge] 6 Judge —3 therin] 6 therein —4 and] 1 & sex] 6 Sex unpleasingnesse] 1 unpleasingnes 6 unpleasingness —5 concealments] 1 concealements —6 masters] 1 maisters —7 exigencies] 6 exigencies lesse] 6 less —8 the eighth] 2, 3 the elighth 1 *th*8th 6 the VIII. reduc't to;] 6 reduc'd to, —9 forgoe] 4, 5, 6 forgo —10 being] 1 beeing —11 his] 6 omits. Cardinall] 1 *cardinal* 6 Cardinal —12 proof] 1 prooff she] 1 shee been] 1 bin —13 ev'n] 6 even nakednesse] 1 nakednes 6 nakedness —14 and] 1 & —15 brothers] 6 Brothers Chamberlain] 1 chamberlain —16 tyranny] 6 Tyranny —17 divorce;] 6 Divorce, reformation] 6 Reformation —18 Kingdome] 1, 4, 5 Kingdom 6 Kingdom, —19 power] 6 Power divorce] 6 Divorce Tis] 6 'Tis adultresse] 1 adultres 6 Adultress —20 enough] 6 enough proceeding;] 1, 6 proceeding; —21 that]

6 the appeach't] 6 impeach'd lesse] 6 less —22 illiberally]  
 6 liberally —23 utterlesse] 1 utterles 6 utterless —24  
 busines] 6 business civill] 1, 6 civil —25 bee] 1, 4, 5, 6 be  
 over-much] 6 over much neerest] 6 nearest *Emilius*] 6 *Æmilius*  
 being] 1 beeing hee] 1, 4, 5, 6 he —28 wife] 6 Wife *Shoo*,  
 said . . . foot,] 1 *Shoo*, saith . . . foot, 6 *Shoo* (said . . . foot)

## PAGE 503

—2 you] 1 yee me:] 1 me? lesse] 6 less —3 cognisance]  
 6 cognizance fee'd gamester] 6 Fee'd Gamester —5-p. 504, l. 2  
 Again . . . conscience.] 1 Lastly, All law is for some good that may be  
 frequently attain'd without the admixture of a wors inconvenience; but  
 the Law forbidding divorce, never attains to any good end of such pro-  
 hibition, but rather multiplies evil. If it aim at the establishment of  
 matrimony, wee know that cannot thrive under a loathed and forc't yoke,  
 but is daily violated: if it seek to prevent the sin of divorcing, that lies  
 not in the law to prevent; for he that would divorce and marry again,  
 but for the law, hath in the sight of God don it already. Civil or politi-  
 cal sin it never was, neither to Jew nor Gentile, nor by any judicial in-  
 tendment of Christ, only culpable as it transgresses the allowance of  
*Moses* in the inward man, which not any law but conscience can only  
 evince. —6 matrimoniall] 4, 5, 6 matrimonial wee] 4, 5, 6 we  
 —7 It is] 6 Is it —8 forc't] 6 forc'd —9 unmercifull dayes]  
 6 unmerciful days unharnesse] 6 unharness —10, 11, 15 marriage]  
 6 Marriage —11 unbrok'n:] 6 unbroken? —13 civill] 6 civil  
 corporal] 4, 5 corporall —14 therein] 4, 5 therin —15  
 undergone:] 6 undergone. —16 equal] 6 equal —17 covnant]  
 6 covenant —19 law,] 6 Law theft] 6 theft, —21 bee] 4,  
 5, 6 be —21, 27 law] 6 Law only] 6 onely —22 plaintiffe  
 himself,] 4, 5 plaintife himself, 6 Plaintiff himself; therefore] 6  
 therefore —23 politicall] 6 political civill] 2, 3 civil 6 civil  
*Jew* nor *Gentile*] 6 Jew or Gentile —24 judicial] 4, 5 judiciall  
 6 Judicial —25 transgresse] 6 transgress —27 and] 4, 5 &

## PAGE 504

—1 spirituall] 6 spiritual —2 conscience] 6 Conscience —2,  
 5, 14 Law] 1 law onely] 1, 4, 5, 6 only —2-3 appoint . . . is  
 to] NOT IN 1. —3 equal] 6 equal —3, 16, 19, 22 divorce]  
 6 Divorce how it is] 1 whether it be —4 divorc't] 6 Divorc'd  
 —5 wherin] 6 wherein —6 not;] 1, 6 not, just,] 1 just  
 deserv'd;] 1 deserv'd, 4, 5 deservd; 6 deserved; —7 divorcer]  
 6 Divorcer —8 unhappinesse] 1 happines 6 hapiness and] 1 &  
 —9 bee] 1, 4, 5, 6 be it be] 6 it to be law] 1, 4, 5, 6 Law

—10 unles] 1 unlesse 6 unless —11 redress] 1 redresse expell'd] 4, 5, 6 expelled —12 intreated] 1 entreated gone] 1 gon else] 1 els —12, 13 married] 6 married —13 marriage] 6 marriage chast'n] 4, 5, 6 chasten divorcer] 4, 5 divourcer —14 morall,] 1 moral, 6 moral —15 injury,] 6 injury? —16 punisht] 6 punish'd —16, 19, 20, 22 divorce] 6 Divorce —17 partake] 1 partake? —17-18 both . . . smart.] NOT IN 1. —18 So . . . look] 1 so that wee see —19 rationall] 1, 6 rational only] 6 onely —20-p. 508, l. 11 Thus . . . it] NOT IN 1. —21 trial] 4, 5 triall law] 6 Law —22 helplesse] 6 helpless hurtfull] 6 hurtful —23 Reason,] 6 Reason divorce] 6 Divorce restrain'd] 4, 5 restrained 6 restrained by] 6 in —24 nature] 6 Nature —25 wherof] 6 whereof referr'd] 4, 5 referrd 6 referred Book] 6 book jure] 6 Jure

## PAGE 505

—1 naturali] 6 Naturali gentium] 6 Gentium objection] 6 Objection answer'd] 4, 5 answerd 6 answered —2 order'd] 4, 5, 6 ordered —3 inconvenience] 6 inconvenience, —4 suffer'd] 4, 5, 6 suffered —5 Therefore] 6 Therefore reason] 4, 5, 6 Reason —7 Common-wealths] 6 Commonwealths —8 human] 6 humane divine testimonies] 6 Divine Testimonies —9 sanctify'd] 6 sanctified —10 who so] 6 whoso —11 heer] 6 omits. overlong rehearsals] 6 over long rehearsals —13 hast'n] 4, 5, 6 hasten volume] 6 Volum —14 learned] 6 Learned law] 4, 5, 6 Law nature] 6 Nature & of] 4, 5 and of 6 and —15 work] 6 Work useful] 4, 5 usefull —17 decretals,] 6 Decretals sumles sums] 6 Sumless Sums Pontifical] 4, 5 Pontifical 6 Pontifical —18 unfortunat mother] 6 unfortunate Mother —19 dy'd] 4, 5 di'd 6 died —20 misbegott'n] 4, 5, 6 misbegotten infants] 6 Infants —20, 21, 25, 27 &] 4, 5, 6 and —20 infants,] 2, 3, 4, 5 infants —22 tother] 6 t'other scholastic] Scholastick —23 barbarism] 6 Barbarism —23, 25 only] 6 onely —24 human learning,] 6 humane learning, —25 nature] 6 Nature —26 nations] 6 Nations divine] 6 Divine doctrine] 4, 5, 6 Doctrine —28 dunceries] 6 Dunceries

## PAGE 506

—1 unskilfulnesse] 6 unskilfulness —3, 26 divorce] 6 Divorce —4 therof] 4, 5, 6 thereof —7 dispence,] 4, 5, 6 dispence, flattrng] 6 flattering —8 bil] 4, 5, 6 bill apology] 6 Apology —9 sollicite] 6 solicit suffer'd] 6 suffered —10 firmament] 6 Firmament —12 els] 6 else —13 whordoms] 6 whoredoms

—16 scrowle] 6 scrole Votes] 6 votes —17 English men] 4, 5, 6 Englishmen decree] 6 Decree —18 scape,] 6 scape fair] 6 fair, shamefull] 6 shameful —19 mean] 6 means —21 Saviour.] 2, 3 Saviour —22 judgement] 6 judgment —23 director] 6 Director reformed writers] 6 Reformed Writers —24 doctrine perswades] 6 Doctrine persuades reasons] 6 Reasons —25 silenc't, unlesse] 6 silenc'd, unless —26 Corinthians] 6 *Corinthians* hardnes] 6 hardness —27 amerc't] 6 amerc'd fine] 6 Fine —28 imprisonment] 6 Imprisonment

## PAGE 507

—1 reverend] 6 Reverend must.] 6 must: —2 Cov'nant] 6 Covenant Paræus] 4, 5, 6 *Paræus* exasperat] 6 exasperate —3, 8 judicial] 4, 5 judiciall 6 Judicial —6 inheritance] 6 Inheritance —7 don] 6 done —9 lesse] 6 less sharper,] 6 sharper —10 heavy; lest] 6 heavy, least arraigne] 6 arraign temporall] 4, 5 temporall 6 Temporal —11 summons] 6 Summons saith he,] 6 (saith he) law] 6 Law —12, 16 youth] 6 Youth —14 inordinat] 6 inordinate —15 natural] 4, 5 naturall blameles] 6 blameless —16 pupillage] 6 Pupillage —17 ceremonial] 4, 5 ceremoniall 6 Ceremonial Jewes] 4, 5, 6 Jews —18 untill] 4, 5 until fulnes] 6 Fulness —19 faith] 6 Faith redemption.] 2, 3, 4, 5 redemption, 6 Redemption. —20 moral] 6 Moral therin] 6 therein —21 babies] 6 Babies men] 6 Men —22 awfull majesty] 6 awful Majesty —23 with;] 4, 5 with, 6 with: nonage] 6 Nonage dispensations] 6 Dispensations —24 throne] 6 Throne bin a leud] 6 been a lewd affront,] 4, 5 affront. —25 grosse] 6 gross this] 6 this, Paræus] 4, 5 *Paræus* 6 *Paræus*, —26 youth] 6 Youth cockring] 6 cockering indulgences] 6 Indulgences —28 correction.] 6 correction?

## PAGE 508

—1, 4 punisht] 6 punish'd —2 trespasse] 6 trespass banefull] 6 baneful youth] 6 Youth —4, 14 only] 6 onely —6 therefore] 6 therefore allow'd] 4, 5 allowd lesse] 6 less whipt] 6 whipp'd —7 penal] 4, 5 penall 6 Penal —8 conscience] 6 Conscience —9 repreev] 6 reprieve —11 what? Shall] 6 what, shall disposal] 4, 5 disposall —12 maister] 4, 5 master 6 Master family] 6 a Family not? Since] 6 not, since —14 it.] 6 it? only] 6 onely —15 Minister] 1 Minister, —15, 16 and] 4, 5 & —16 Elders;] 6 Elders, admonisht] 6 admonish'd prest] 6 press'd —17 and] 1 & —18 faith] 6 Faith —19 resurrection] 6 Resurrection doe] 4, 5, 6 do —20 him-

self,] 6 himself and] 1, 4, 5 & prohibition] 6 Prohibition  
 —21 divorce] 6 Divorce pronounc't] 6 pronounc'd —22 being]  
 1 beeing —23 further] 6 further —25 weight] 1 waight  
 —26 Gospel] 4 Gospell —27 mariage] 4, 6 marriage children]  
 1 children —28 Common-wealth;] 1 Common wealth. 6  
 Commonwealth,

## PAGE 509

—1 but . . . respects.] NOT IN 1. will] 1 would —2 con-  
 fusion.] 6 confusion: —2-7 Yet . . . permission.] NOT IN 1. Yet]  
 6 yet —3 object,] 6 object —4 book] 6 Book God,] 6 God  
 —5 wisdom] 6 wisdom —6 forecast] 4 fore-cast —7-8 But  
 let them be of good cheer,] 1 Be of good cheer, it would not: —8  
 Jews] 1, 6 *Jews* —9 captivity,] 1 captivity 6 Captivity  
 Prophets] 1 Profets —10 rebuking] 6 the rebuking lookt into,]  
 6 look'd into —11 appeare] 6 appear be,] 6 be divorcing]  
 6 Divorcing —13 wives] 6 Wives therefore] 1 therfore we]  
 1, 4 wee —14 Jews] 1, 6 *Jews* 4 Jewes prohibitors] 6 Pro-  
 hibitors —15 divorce] 6 Divorce lesse confusion] 6 less Confu-  
 sion —16 bee] 1, 4, 5, 6 be fear'd] 6 feard us,] 1, 6 us  
 —17 wee] 6 we bee] 4, 6 be worse] 1 wors —18 confirm]  
 4 confirme we] 1 wee much] 6 much, —19 law] 6 Law  
 therefore] 1 expresly 4, 6 therefore —20 (as they say)] NOT IN 1.  
 covenant] 4 cov'nant 6 Covenant therfore] 6 therefore —21  
 goe] 6 go needlesse] 6 needless —22 self,] 1 self fals] 4, 6  
 false strictnes] 6 strictness —23 impos'd] 4 imposd above;]  
 1 above, —24 &] 1, 4, 6 and *Be*] 1 *Bee* —25 counsell] 1,  
 6 counsel *Ecclesiastes*,] 1, 6 *Ecclesiastes*; —26 selfe] 1, 6 self  
 over-curious] 6 over curious atoms] 6 atoms —27 liberty;] 1  
 liberty: 4, 6 liberty, —28 nature] 6 Nature needfull] 1, 6  
 needful pores,] 6 pores

## PAGE 510

—1 debar'd] 1, 4, 6 debarr'd weaknesse] 1 weaknes 6 weakness  
 —2 vice,] 6 vice —3 heresie] 1 heresy else] 1 els —4  
 fruitlesse] 1 fruitles 6 fruitless —5 law] 6 Law evils] 1, 6  
 evils —6 beseech] 4 beseech religion] 6 Religion Church,]  
 1 Church wisdom] 1 wisdom 4 wisdom 6 Wisdom —7  
 doing,] 6 doing —9 honour] 6 Honour —10 laws] 6 Laws  
 mans] 6 Mans —12 dispensing] 6 dispensing ages] 6 Ages  
 ratify'd adultery] 6 ratified Adultery —15 key] 6 Key charity]  
 6 Charity helples] 4, 6 helpless —16 sadnes] 6 sadness dis-  
 tresse] 6 distress —17 unfitted,] 6 unfitted are,] 6 are serve]

1 serv man] 6 Man —18 reclaime] 6 reclaim sects] 6 Sects  
 —19 licence] 6 Licence from] 4 for —20 hardnes,] 6 hardness  
 —21 daughters] 6 Daughters —22 whom] 6 whom bound] 2,  
 3 bound years] 4 yeares —23 dignity,] 6 Dignity preroga-  
 tive] 6 Prerogative nature] 6 Nature —24 souls] 6 Souls  
 carnall] 1, 6 carnal —25 rage.] 4 rage; 6 rage, Mariage] 6  
 Marriage perilous] 6 perillous —26 bee] 1, 6 be hav'n]  
 6 haven

## PAGE 511

—1 wisdom] 4 wisdom goodnes] 6 goodness covnant] 4 cov-  
 nant 6 Covenant —2 and] 1 & by] 4, 6 OMIT. law] 6 Law  
 —3 blameles nature] 6 blameless Nature —5 discipline] 6 Discipline  
 turn] 4 turne successe] 6 success —6 loosenes] 6 loosness  
 —7 themselves] 1 themselv ages] 6 Ages —8 them,] 1 them  
 —9 observances] 6 Observances requir'd] 6 required civilest] 6  
 civillest —10 morall] 1, 6 moral —11 vertue] 1 vertu  
 equall] 1, 6 equal —12 still is] 6 is still textuall] 1, 6 textual  
 restrictions, wherof] 4, 6 restriction, whereof —13 somtimes] 4,  
 6 sometimes humanity] 6 Humanity lesse] 6 less —14 charity]  
 6 Charity —15 seem] 4 seeme —16 wherof] 4, 6 whereof  
 —18, 20 goe] 6 go therfore] 4, 6 therefore loath] 6 loth —19  
 blindnes] 6 blindness —20 Pharises,] 6 Pharisees; therfore] 4,  
 6 therefore —21 sacrifice] 4 sacrafice —22 Prcphets] 1 Profets  
 —23 Gospel] 6 Gospel, Or] 6 or —24 hear] 4 heare this,]  
 6 this? —25 conclusion:] 6 Conclusion, —26 Son] 4 Sonne  
 feet; 6 feet, —27 Commandments] 4 Commandements hee] 1,  
 6 he Charity] 1 charity The end] 1 The end 6 THE END

2, 3, 5 HAVE THE FOLLOWING ERRATA: Page 15. line 8. *read* it the  
 glassy Sea. p. 32. l. 6. *for* or, *read* nor. p. 39. l. 32. *for* give, *read* find.  
 lin. 34. *for* will, freewill. lin. 38. *read* he acquitts. p. 51. l. 26. *for*  
 without a comma.

1 AND 6 HAVE NO ERRATA. 4 HAS THE FOLLOWING VARIANT READINGS:  
 nor.] 4 ADDS p. 34. l. 15. *read* any Tyrant or Politician. give,] give  
 lin. 38] 1. 38 acquitts] acquits *for*] *for*,



COLUMBIA UNIVERSITY PRESS  
COLUMBIA UNIVERSITY  
NEW YORK

---

FOREIGN AGENT  
OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS  
HUMPHREY MILFORD  
AMEN HOUSE, LONDON, E.C.

